



替身新娘

THE BRIDE SUBSTITUTE

日本传统婚礼文化 日本传统婚礼文化 日本传统婚礼文化

日本传统婚礼文化



替身新娘

作者：風塵 插畫：LIZHILIU



替身新娘 替身新娘
替身新娘 替身新娘



替身新娘 替身新娘

替身新娘 替身新娘 替身新娘 替身新娘 替身新娘 替身新娘 替身新娘 替身新娘 替身新娘 替身新娘

替身新娘 替身新娘

lang="en">

The Substitute Bride - Chapter 001-129

Table of Contents

1. [1](#)
2. [2](#)
3. [3](#)
4. [4](#)
5. [5](#)
6. [6](#)
7. [7](#)
8. [8](#)
9. [9](#)
10. [10](#)
11. [11](#)
12. [12](#)
13. [13 – 14](#)
14. [15](#)
15. [16](#)
16. [17](#)
17. [18](#)
18. [19](#)
19. [20](#)
20. [21](#)
21. [22](#)
22. [23](#)
23. [24](#)
24. [25](#)
25. [26](#)
26. [27](#)
27. [28](#)

28. [29](#)
29. [30](#)
30. [31](#)
31. [32](#)
32. [33](#)
33. [34](#)
34. [35](#)
35. [36](#)
36. [37](#)
37. [Special Chapters \(39-42\)](#)
38. [43](#)
39. [44 – 45](#)
40. [46](#)
41. [47](#)
42. [48](#)
43. [49](#)
44. [50](#)
45. [51](#)
46. [52](#)
47. [53](#)
48. [54](#)
49. [55](#)
50. [56](#)
51. [57](#)
52. [58](#)
53. [59](#)
54. [60](#)
55. [61](#)
56. [62](#)
57. [63](#)
58. [64](#)
59. [65](#)
60. [66](#)
61. [67](#)

62. [68](#)
63. [69](#)
64. [70](#)
65. [71](#)
66. [72](#)
67. [73](#)
68. [74](#)
69. [75](#)
70. [76](#)
71. [77](#)
72. [78](#)
73. [79](#)
74. [80](#)
75. [81](#)
76. [82](#)
77. [83](#)
78. [84](#)
79. [85](#)
80. [86](#)
81. [87](#)
82. [88](#)
83. [89](#)
84. [90](#)
85. [91](#)
86. [92](#)
87. [93](#)
88. [94](#)
89. [95](#)
90. [97 – 98](#)
91. [99](#)
92. [100](#)
93. [101](#)
94. [102](#)
95. [103](#)

96. [104](#)
97. [105](#)
98. [106](#)
99. [107](#)
00. [108](#)
01. [109](#)
02. [110](#)
03. [111](#)
04. [112](#)
05. [113](#)
06. [114](#)
07. [115](#)
08. [116](#)
09. [117](#)
10. [118](#)
11. [119](#)
12. [120](#)
13. [121](#)
14. [122](#)
15. [123 – 125](#)
16. [126](#)
17. [127](#)
18. [128](#)
19. [129](#)

1



Hi Fellow Reader,
Thanks for the warm, positive and encouraging response for all this time which keep motivating me. When I started the General translation project, I still doubt myself that I would finish the project but as time passes, I really enjoy doing this project. very excited and here I present first chapter of the second translation project, The Substitute Bride...

Chapter 1 First Day of The Wedding Night

Night is coming, every road in the capital city (Beijing) is quiet, but on this time the North City of the Ye residence is filled with happy atmosphere.

“Ye Lao Ye ^[1], today really is happy day! Congratz!”

“It’s an honor for us to have Li Da Ren ^[2] coming to our residence and congratulating our the child!” Ye Peng face is filled with happy smile expression.

“Time is getting late, I should get back because tomorrow I still need to attend the palace meeting.”

“Li Da Ren, so I won’t bother you, inside there are still many guests, I will let the Jiang Butler to escort you.”

“Don’t be such courteous, you go back for busying!” said Li Da Ren.

“Jiang Buttler you escort Li Da Ren, Li Da Ren you take care!”

“Yes, Lao Ye. Li Da Ren, Please.”

From the view of Ye Lao Ye’s the guests, the important guest has already leaved, so one by one of them also leaving.

Ye Che is today leading role but no word that comes out from his mouth, only cold eyes staring one by one the guests, looking at his father who escorting the guest, one to another. What kind of parent that forcing they child for having political marriage, he is well known to have frivolous reputation, an arrogant and obstinate, outstanding prodigal son but who knows he even experiencing the day of being compelled. Even when he was dreaming it was still unbelievable for him. Moreover, his mother even using his sister happiness to threaten him.

At this time, whatever they asked him to do has already been done by him, they just welcoming a girl whom her future would be ruined. That girl forever won’t ever receive his feeling, who asked that girl comes and to be dragged with him.

After finished cup of wine, Ye Che put down the cup and walking toward the

main door.

“Third Young Master, you can’t go out, Master^[3]” The guard that guarding the door blocking him.

“Third Young Master, today is your big day!”

“Third Young Master...”

But their skill is good for nothing compare to Ye Che who has high martial art skill. Lightly Ye Che dodging all of them and go out from Ye resident, leaving a group of the servant with bad face expression.

Double happiness, red candles, noise and excitement, joyful.....

Long Mo Er sitting in the bed, looking at the gorgeous bright red color of bridal veil (covering the face), feeling something inconceivable, she is married. No, it should say that she is the replacement of her elder sister to get married, married to a man that she never seen his face.

Her forehead feels little numb, above her head is stick with Feng Guan Xiang (something like Chinese heavy tiara) which filled with many jade bead, being sew with tassels. It heavy and covered half of her neck. Really not understand, during the time of get married, why the bride should put so many things like this? And still need to put so many weird things onto the face? Using so thick powder to cover her face and the fragrant which makes her feel dizzy.

Anyway, there is no one here, Long Mo Er lift the clothes that cover her head, and also put down the Feng Guan : “ah, finally feels much comfortable, Damn Lu Qun, we were came to the agreement even death she should come together with me, said that would company me to here when I get married so that she could taking care of me, but now, even her shadow I couldn’t see her, Damn Maid!”

Walking forward for few steps, on the table it full with many types of pastry, she randomly takes something to eat, she is devoured ravenously put into her mouth, she filling her mouth and said: “Damn maid, when leaving the house saying too much touching words to Mother and Big Sis as if hovering between life and death, and now where are you gone? Tossing me alone in here, geez.”

Not carefully choked.

Long Mo Er quickly grabbing the drink that is on the table, drinking it. The wine smoothly entering to her throat, kind of hot and sting smell, but after at the mouth then to the nasal cavity the smell gone.

“Ah, hot~~~~!”

“Ah, the taste so awful, putting here just wanting to poison me to death ya!” she used her hand to wipe it.

Seeing the four corners of the room, all is red color, seeing those things Long Mo Er feels bit dizzy. Hence, she is in the bed, touching the bed : “It so comfortable.”

She gets into the bed, only at short time she is falling asleep.

[1] Lao Ye : Master used for respectful terms

[2] Da Ren : Title of respect toward superior

[3] Zhu Zi : Master (term used by the servant to called the superior)

2

Long Mo Er was spending her wedding night alone without her husband because Ye Che was staying outside.

Her Maid, Lu Qun rushing to wake her up to inform her about news that she had heard,

But...

Her Miss really ignorant.

She doesn't have any objection with Ye Che who was leaving her alone since she doesn't care of that man, not to mention about care, love and feeling, she even never see Ye Che in real person. She married without have any information about the man who she married with. tck tck tck....

Chapter 2 The Early Morning Crisis

The sky is slowly brighten, the sun also starting to shine out from the clouds.

The little maid is walking in the corridor, walking in hurried through the long corridor, flurried open the wedding room.

“It not good, Miss, Miss.” She just straightly runs to enter the room, shaking the person body who is still sleeping in the bed. “It not good, Miss wake up.”

“Miss, you wake up, Miss.”

The person who is lying at the bed doesn't even move.

“Lao Ye is coming.” No others way, she fake out saying that Master (Lao Ye) is coming, on this way using her Master name, probably her Miss will listen.

It really works, “whiz” at the moment, Long Mo Er as if being thundered by the lightning, suddenly gets up and sitting right the way.

“Where is my father? Where is my father ah?” Long Mo Er half awake asking. Who knows that the person she most afraid in her life is her father, carefully looking around, she finally realizing that she is being tricked.

“Damn Lu Qun, you dare to deceive me.” She glared at Lu Qun.

“Miss, I don't mean to deceive you, who knows that you are sleeping alike death person...” Lu Qun softly murmured.

“What, you still dare to talk back.” Even it was soft voice but still Long Mo Er heard it.

“Miss, I understand, later on I won't dare anymore.’

Long Mo Er looking at four corners, feeling so strange. “What place is this? It seems not my room.”

“Miss, this is the residence of Ye's, yesterday you are married to the Ye household, did you remember?” towards her confused Miss, Lu Qun really couldn't do anything, helplessly shook her head.

“Oh, it seems...I have little of impression.” Long Mo Er said.

“This is Ye residence, no wonder when I woke up it is different from my room.” She looked at herself who is still wearing the red wedding dress, suddenly she recalled her memory.

“Miss, I come here to inform you news that I just heard, because of you, I almost forget about it.”

“What matters? Did my father realize about my sister?”

“Not about that matter, Gu Ye (young master who married to her Miss) last night was spending his time in Bai Hua Lane, leaving you alone in here.”

“Gu Ye?”

“Miss, can you be more serious, Ye Qie, the man yesterday you married with.”

“Oh, that dud who I married with.” Finally Long Mo Er got understand.

“That place which you said just now, Bai Hua Lane, what kind of place it is? What is the connection with me if he spending night at here?”

“Bai Hua Lane is one of the famous prostitute house in Central city (Beijing), just now the servant said that The Third Young master was staying there, Bai Hua Lane’s Fei Yan is Third Young Master confidante. Miss, yesterday was your big day, he even leaving you alone who is his legal wife and went to the prostitution house. Miss, how could you still have a good sleep yesterday? Didn’t you know what the servants said about you along this way? I see this matter will be big problems, the Third Young Master doesn’t care with you, everyone know it, later on in the future you might lost your dignity and the respect.” Lu Qun feels angrier and angrier.

Long Mo Er, not even angry, she even smiles slightly. It seems this matter will let her happy.

“Miss, are you having fever? Why you don’t even angry after hearing this news?” Lu Qun shocked and touching Long Mo Er forehead.

“You are the one who having fever, why should I angry? You are forget, I married into this family because for helping out my sister and brother Leng who are in love, while Ye Qie and I aren’t have feeling for each other, I don’t even like

him. He didn't come to disturb me, I should be happy. Do not need to fake as my sister, I don't even know how my sister is, will we anger our father by doing this kind of things? Does Mother is alright? I really miss them." Long Mo Er eyes little moist.

"Miss, you don't need to be sad, after passing this two days we will be able to go home to see them."

"Who is Ye Qi's confidante?" suddenly Long Mo Er asked.

"Fei Yan, Fei from the Fei Hong, Yan from Yu Meng Meng Yan words."

"Fei Yan, good name, it seems to be a good looking person hearing from the name, the real person might be very beautiful. If Ye Qi really chooses that Fei Yan than me, perhaps because of that Fei Yan, he might divorce me, on that way, I might be able to go home. But, my sister's name might be ruined. However in this way, my sister can publicize her relationship with Brother Leng. Both of them can exchange the life and death promise, Brother Leng might not mind this matter. Doesn't this could be called as killed two birds with one stone?" Long Mo Er more she thought more she felt happier she is.

"Miss, I really don't understand you and don't know how to say about you, on this entire world only you the person who can think in this way." She really doesn't know whether she should be happy for her Miss or sad for her, but still as long as she feels happy everything is alright.

"Lu Qun, where were you last night?" suddenly Long Mo Er asked, last night she was being left alone by her in this place, only by this little chaos she almost forgot to settle the account with her.

"This, This... Miss, it is really embarrassing, The people in Ye's residence were too nice, they were offering me to drink cups of wine, so I was unconscious for whole night, really embarrassing." Lu Qun embarrassed said.

"Later on, both of us should practice for drinking the wine." Thought about last night incident only drank one cup of wine, she has been choked, said Long Mo Er who didn't feel satisfied.

She jumped down from bed : "Lu Qun, help me to change my clothes, it's time for us to greet the elders of the Ye residence, don't forget that Long Wan Er is

someone educated and well balance, She also someone being piety to parent, honest and up right person!

Chapter 3 Meeting the Ye's Family for First Time

Long Mo Er changed her yesterday wedding dress, she even looked more graceful.

Her appearance without any cosmetic and make up powder, she is also showing an impeccable beauty.

Following the curvature four corners in corridor, all is surrounded by the exotic flowers and rare herbs which plants in the courtyard garden, the stone is also beautifully being carved that showed special characteristic that furnish and decorate inside the courtyard. Long Mo Er is taking deep breath!

It seems the Ye residence is one of the rich and wealthy family in this Central City, there is no slightly wrong, looking at this scenery of the garden, compare to ours house garden, it bigger multiple times, compare to ours family house, this residence is more splendid multiple times.”

“Do you see? That is the Third Young Madam” said one of the maid who standing near the curves’ corridor corner.

“Very beautiful!” the other maid said with soft voice.

“That’s right, she is so beautiful, but sadly a bride that so beautiful like her was abandoned by our Third Young Master, abandoned her for others woman.”

“This also couldn’t blame Third Young Master, it because Lao Ye and Fu Ren (Madam) forcing Third Young Master to get married.”

All these words are all passed into Long Mo Er ears, actually the man isn’t willingly to marry her, so onwards, this will be more interesting, she really wants to see that Ye Che, The Third Young Master of the Ye’s family, how he looks alike, since the one of best woman like her sister, he doesn’t even want. Yesterday along the street she was wearing the red long face veil, she didn’t able to see anything, today she should able to see that Casanova man which famous by his looks as said by the folks.

Finally with the guide of the servants, Long Mo Er enters the big hall.

At the center of the big hall two elders are sitting, one is filled with serious expression, the other one is filled with elegant charm. Think about it, they should be Ye Peng and his wife, Rong Shi. Ye Che's Father and Mother.

At the four seats, there are four outstanding people consisting of young men and women, the men are handsome, the women are smart-looking, they must be Ye Che siblings.

Long Mo Er walking to the middle of the big hall, kneeling in front of Ye Peng and Rong Shi : "Wan Er greeting Father and Mother."

"Good, good, hurried stand up, our family don't really need this kind of courtesy." Rong Shi raised her body up to help Mo Er who is kneeling to get up.

"Thank You Mother!" Long Mo Er gives her smile.

"Lu Qun, pour the tea." Long Mo Er said to Lu Qun who stands next to her, Lu Qun is busying starting this morning because of preparing this good tea, pouring to Long Mo Er.

"Father, please having the tea."

Ye Peng takes the cup of tea, take a sip : "No wonder the Long Family is well-known as the educated family, they have teach their daughter very well."

"Father is over-praised."

"Mother, please having a tea."

"Good, good... daughter is really good."

"Father, Mother, both of you are too bias, does only the Third Sister in Law is good, how about us, don't we also good enough? Even though it true that she really is, but still both of you shouldn't say it in front of us." Suddenly the man who sitting at other side said.

"There is no need glib tongued, carefully it will scare Wan Er." Rong Shi said by pulling Long Mo Er's hand to her side.

"This is Che Er's younger brother, Ye Ding, his character is kind of like this and you don't need to feel uncomfortable because of his words. That one is Che Er's

big brother Ye Yu, and that one who sits next to him is his wife, your big Sister in Law, Mu Rong Ji Zi. The one who sit beside Ding Er is the youngest sister, Ruo Xuan.”

“Wan Er greeting Big Brother, Big Sister in Law, the Fourth Young Master and Ruo Xuan Mei Mei.”

“Che Er married one good wife. Too good.” Rong Shi looked at Long Mo Er who is so mature, really feels happy.

“Wan Er, Che Er last night... all because we couldn't teach our son, causing you to feel unpleasant.” Ye Peng face expression slowly changed.

“Father, doesn't put blame on yourself, perhaps at the moment the Third Young Master hasn't adapt, I am not blaming him, I don't feel any bit of unpleasant. Moreover the people in here are so taking care of me, seeing how you and Mother really care of me, I am really touched.” Long Mo Er learnt from how usually her sister acted, actually the half of her last word is really sincere words, Ye Peng and Rong Shi really makes people feel close with them, on their self, she find a trace of her own Father and Mother.

“Wan Er, come, Mother doesn't have anything that can give to you, this is the blue hairpin that has been with me for twenty years, this is giving to you!” After said, she took down the hairpin from her hair.

“No, Mother, this is too precious, Wan Er, can't accept it.”

“No matter, come, let Mother puts it on your hair.” Rong Shi took the hairpin and put it to Long Mo Er's hair.

“Really beautiful.”

Looking at Rong Shi loving expression, Long Mo Er tears suddenly dropping down, they are really nice toward hers, if really one day they found that she is not the real Long Wan Er, how they will react?

“Wan Er, what happen, why you are crying?” Rong Shi and Ye Peng couldn't help and don't know what to do.

“No, Mother, all of you are so nice, other than my Father, my Mother and my big sister, exclude my younger sister, all of you are so nice to me.”

“Stupid girl. Now we all are family, if we are not good to you, who will do?” Rong Shi takes out her silk handkerchief, gently wiping Long Mo Er tears.

“Mei Mei, now we are family, all of us should be happy now.” Mu Rong Ji Zi said.

“Ng, thank you all of you.”

“It’s alright, Wan Er, now you going back for rest, if there is something lack or less, hurried say to Mother.”

“Alright, Father and Mother, Big brother and big sister in law, Fourth Young Master and Ruo Xuan Mei Mei, Wan Er asked for leaving.”

After leaving the hall, finally Long Mo Er takes a deep breath: “Finally I passed this ones, it seems the Ye’s family members are types of good people.”

“No, Miss, just now the Big Young Master, Big Young Madam, The Fourth Young Master, The Fifth Young Miss, all of them were glaring at you, their response were not really obvious, I even thought that you were being recognized. Still my Miss, you really didn’t need to act so seriously, you make me feel so touching, I almost crying together with you. Never thought that you are so good actress, your acting was so real.”

“You dummy, I wasn’t acting just now?” Long Mo Er takes out the blue hairpin and observing it.

“Ye Fu Ren (Madam Ye refer to Rong Shi) and Ye Lao Ye (Master Ye refer to Ye Peng) are so good to me, they seem to look me as their own daughter, but at the beginning I am the one who lie to them.” Long Mo Er felt herself uneasy and her heart feel little bit uncomfortable.

“Based on just now situation, both of the elders seem to be like you very much.” Lu Qun also felt the same.

“It true, don’t know, on the day they find out that I am lying to them, will they put blame on me.”

“Miss, the matter of the future, let settle and think it in the future.”

Long Mo Er silent.

“Miss, after you married into Ye’s household, what will we do on our days?”

“Let take a walk in Ye Residence, get familiar with the environment. It seems I will stay in here for some time, so let we take a stroll and looking on the four corners of this residence. I still need to wait for Ye Che goes home, wanting to know whether he is god or ghost^[1].” She really curious with the man she is married with.

“Let me telling you the truth, The Third Young Master figure is so good looking, his appearance is not lose to the Leng Young Master if both of them being compared.”

“What? Is he more good looking compare to Leng Big Brother? How can it be, Leng Big Brother is kind of rare beautiful man that can be find.” Said Long Mo Er disbelief.

“I don’t know what how to use the word to describe the Third Young Master, Miss, just now you even have seen all the Ye’s family members, The men are handsome while the women are smart-looking. Big young Master, Fourth Young Master and Fifth Miss, all of them can be the proved.”

“It seem to be right, Lu Qun, today we cancel strolling Ye residence.”

“So Miss, what will we do?”

“Go to find Ye Che.” Long Mo Er hurried said.

4

On the last chapter, Long Mo Er has meet her husband family minus Ye Che. She tried to fake as her elder sister, Long Wan Er who is someone elegant, has manner, feminine, well-behave and others quality of “standard and proper daughter in law” for wealthy family.

The result is so satisfying =D

After greeting and meeting Ye Che’s family, she is trying to find her husband out of her curiosity....

rather than strolling and have a look of the Ye residence, she choose to go outside, directly visit Bai Hua Lane.

Then something happen before she could meet her husband...

Chapter 4 Meeting Thief in Street

In the middle of bustling street, people are busy with their own matters walking to and fro. One of the girls is frowning and feeling unhappy while another girl is looking so excited and happy.

“Miss, it better for us to go back home now!”

“Lu Qun, haven’t I told you many times? Called me Mo Er, I am not what Missy, this is only the status of Miss and Maid.”

“But, Miss, it still better if we go back home, if we are being discovered, we will be death meat.”

“One more time you called me Miss, I won’t allow you to follow me.”

“Mis..., Mo Er, if the Ye’s people discovered you are missing, they might go to flip the sky (super panicking).” Lu Qun almost called wrong and she was glaring by Long Mo Er, quickly changed how to call her Miss name.

“No problems, just now, didn’t I let you to inform the servant that I wanted to take a rest, then no one will come and disturb, and this is my habit. Believe on me, there will be no one who will come and disturb me, moreover I am wearing your clothes, going out with you to purchase Miss daily needs, no problem.” Long Mo Er patting Lu Qun shoulder, trying to ensure her.

“But, Mis... Mo Er, we can’t go to Bai Hua Lane, there is brothel, and girls can’t go inside.” Long Mo Er planning to visit that place makes Lu Qun unease.

“We only go for a little while, after seeing Ye Che, we will be hurried back, is it good. Anyway, today I must see him. Or else, I won’t go back.”

“But...”

“Why today you are such coward? You don’t want to go, then I will go by myself.” After said, Long Mo Er took a big step walking forward.

“Miss, wait for me.” Lu Qun just accepting her fate, chasing to Mo Er, her

heart murmured: Lao Ye Fu Ren (Master, Madam), begging you two helping me!

Only walk couple steps, Long Mo Er sees thief, the hands so smooth when taking the wallet of one Lao Da Ye (Oldman), she followed the thief. “ A thief, there is someone stealing thing.”

In collision, the thief was blocked for several times, finally Long Mo Er able to keep the pace with the thief.

“Don’t try to escape, obediently give me back the wallet.”

Long Mo Er is using her random martial art movement facing the thief, not long after that, Long Mo Er is in winning state, she thought: never expect things that only play for fun, some time ago begging Leng Big Brother to teach couple movement, now she really make a use of it. The thief can’t win over Long Mo Er, after distract Long Mo Er, he seeks for opportunity to escape.

Running till other side of corner, the thief stood up and made kind of signal’s sound. Not long after that, only at glance suddenly there are five or six persons who has martial art appeared, surrounded Long Mo Er.

“This time I really get in big trouble, I am only learn two moves, could defend one person is already too good. I should listen to Lu Qun, obediently stay at home. Now I only can rely on my strategy, well, thirty six plan, walk according the plan.” Long Mo Er is counter measure the situation, looking at the four corners, just now when she run there is small alley that thoroughly the street, only by this way to escape! She tries to rely on that alley to escape, slowly she makes her moves.

But unluckily, her plan was being found out by the thief. “Little maid, what are you doing? Trying to escape?” suddenly the thief said, Long Mo Er startled on the ground.

What should I do?

“Little maid, better you don’t think to escape, if just now you are not disturbing my business, you won’t end like this.” The thief that being hit by Long Mo Er just now spoke out.

“You guys are stealing, no matter what it is, still wrong.” Long Mo Er felt dissatisfied said.

“You are hard to protect yourself and still thinking to teach us, just think about yourself first!”

“Big Brother, seeing this little maid, delicate skin and fair complexion, how about selling her to Bai Hua Lane! We will earn hundred of Liang (money)!”

“hahaha! Little maid, you are not bad ya!”

That scoundrel hanging their smile.....

“Come to end, come to end” Long Mo Er never thought she will experience to this such down situation! She can't obediently to be taken advantage by them, she wants to escape. She decided, Long Mo Er by surprised finding the way to escape.

“All move.” The person who is called as Big Brother shouted when seeing Long Mo Er escaping.

Not long after that, Long Mo Er is being caught by the scoundrel, while one of the men is holding a wooden stick on his hand, he hit her and she just can shut her eyes.

“MY GOD, who will coming and help me out!

5

Long Mo Er being capture by bad guys...

Who will come to help?

Where is Ye Che?

Ah~ this is classic scene...

Long Mo Er is saved by handsome man who actually is Ye Che, her own husband. So, this is the first meeting between Long Mo Er with her husband and also with the well-known Fei Yan, the beauty of Bai Hua Lane.

Chapter 5 Encounter Third Young Master

For quite sometimes, Long Mo Er didn't feel anything happen to her. On the other hands, she heard the wooden stick sound fall and her hands was free.

She opened wide her eyes, a figure who is wearing purple robe is standing in front of her, a total mess young man. He gives her slightly smile. That smile just astonishing her to be dumbfounded.

"Young lady, are you alright?" That man looked at the girl who didn't have any response, feel little bit worry.

"Oh, no problem, are you the person who helped me?"

"You are maiden, why you provoke the hooligan?" The man didn't answer but instead asking back, never seen any young lady who only know little about martial art movement alike this girl in this big street moreover they even had fight, this young lady really unique. She even makes him more curious.

"Just now they were stealing, I did chase them until here. Never thought." Talking till here, Long Mo Er, suddenly she turned her body and spoke to the thief who was stealing the wallet : "Take out the wallet that you stole just now."

That person groping his clothes to take out the wallet, giving it to Long Mo Er.

"In the future, don't let me to see you guys break the laws and commit crimes, or else I won't let you off so easily." The man looked at them said.

"Yes, we won't dare anymore." The one who was captured carelessly answered.

"Get lost all of you."

The one who captured were disappearing so fast.

Long Mo Er is curious why those people are afraid of him, does he that scary?
"Do they and you know each other?"

"Could considered to be!" The man is smiling, according to his reputation, it

will be weird if they don't afraid of him!

"Really thank you! If there are no you to help me, I really don't know what should do. My name is Long Mo Er, you?" she wants to be friend with him.

"Third Young Master."

"Miss."

Two names being called at once.

"San Shao (Third Young Master)? The Ye's third young master?" Long Mo Er dumbfounded.

"Third Young Master, you are here, I have searching you for half day. Who is this young lady?" one very beautiful young lady walking towards his side, looking at Long Mo Er with curiosity and asked.

"Miss, are you okay? You scared me to death." Lu Qun worried asking. Realizing something wrong with Long Mo Er expression, she also followed the direction of Long Mo Er vision view.

"Ah! The Third Young Master." Lu Qun surprised shouting.

"Aren't you the dowry maid of Long household who coming along?" Ye Qie is so surprised when seeing Lu Qun. He remembered yesterday he had seen this dowry maid who accompany the Miss of Long's household during the wedding ceremony, she should be in Ye residence now, and the person she called as Miss just now, a person with maid dress up, even she can't compare with Fei Yan's beauty, but she is fresh and refine, a pair of shining eyes with sparkling eyesight, no matter how to see, she doesn't seem alike maid, who is she? Don't mention that she is the woman whom he married yesterday?

"Fei Yan, you go back first, I still have business, tomorrow I will come to find you." Said Ye Qie by keep on looking Long Mo Er.

"Are you Fei Yan? The well-known Fei Yan from Bai Hua Lane? The confidante of Ye Qie?" There is no slightly dissatisfied, Long Mo Er expression filled with happiness, excitement and expecting for the woman who standing right beside Ye Qie. She is as beauty as thought by her, the person indeed as beauty as her name.

Fei Yan didn't understand looking at the girl, there is no slightly discrimination or looking down glance. Moreover her eyes is sparkling and shining so brightly.

“Woah! You are beautiful, really so beautiful, really happy can see and meet you in person.”

Fei Yan facing this kind of naïve person like hers, doesn't know how to speak, she only nodding and smiling to her.

“Fei Yan, you better go back.” Feeling being neglected, Ye Qie said with unpleasant.

Hence, Fei Yan leaving, eventually she wanting to know the girl, but Ye Qie said they still have business, so she better leaving, she doesn't want to interrupt and wasting Ye Qie's time.

“Now, could you tell me who are you, actually?” Ye Qie throwing a glance toward Long Mo Er, not slipping anything from her face expression.

“I am your wife, Long Wan Er.” Long Mo Er dissatisfied and pouting her mouth (to express her anger and displeasure), never thought on the moment she went out, she has been captured, moreover the one who helped and discovered her is him.

“No, you are not Long Wan Er, just now you said that you are Long Mo Er.” Ye Che didn't forget how natural she introduced her own name.

After he said half of the sentences, Long Mo Er felt that her heart as if jump out, but after he finished the other half of the sentences, she felt so relieved.

She quick witted said : “ when I was young, My sister and I like to play and one time we thought to play something catch our interest, so that time we were set the rule, whenever we introduced ourselves to others, I was called as Mo Er while my sister called as Wan Er. This game has been played for years, so it becomes habit!”

“Is it the truth reason?”

“It true ah~ if you don't believe, you can ask Lu Qun.”

At the other side Lu Qun is so worried, using her courage, she nodding her head, Ye Che leisurely lower his head as gesture he is satisfied with the answer.

“So how come both of you being here?”

“Could we continue when we are at home? Talking like this is so tiring!” The way Ye Che asking Long Mo Er makes her displeased and complained.

“Ng, alright!” Ye Che not opposed, he really wants to make clear this bizarre Long Wan Er.

Once Long Mo Er turned her body, she exposing slightly smile, she wants to use this delaying tactics in order to think about what kind of answer she will give to Ye Che’s question.

6

Usually my day is pack but December always being the most busying month from twelve months every year. I afraid I won't be able to up date the translation on time, but still will give my best

Long Mo Er hoping for having a peaceful live with Ye Che on this Marriage, she really want to get along with him but her plans just doesn't work as her wish...

Ye Che didn't really mean when he shouted at Long Mo Er. He only vent his anger after being forced till his limit...

CHAPTER 6 Displeasure of Loneliness

Inside the silent room, Ye Che didn't say anything, while Long Mo Er is silent.

Long Mo Er uses her hand to support her chin, very serious looked at Ye Che. Lu Qun is standing beside her, feeling all her body is wetting by the cold sweat. None of them burst a word, letting anyone who sees it will feel their self numb. No, will the Third Young Master finds out that miss is the fake one?

“Lu Qun, you may take your leave, I have words to talk with your miss.” Perhaps because of Ye Che felt the discomfort of Lu Qun's appearance, he is opened his mouth said.

Lu Qun throw a glance to Long Mo Er, but Long Mo Er is looking at Ye Che, it seems she didn't hear what Ye Che said, so it better for her to take her leave as Ye Che told.

“It was you who said to talk after we back, so now, you could tell me, how could you appear in street?” Ye Che felt being stared by someone is so weird, especially by Long Mo Er, this weird young lady.

But Long Mo Er still staring and kept silent.

“To be honest, you are really a man that who is so good looking that I ever seen. Lu Qun isn't lying to me.”

For such long time, suddenly Long Mo Er burst out this kind of words. Even the answer is so irrelevant, but Ye Che still likes to hear it, he never heard any young lady from any household that staring at mature man and said that kind of words, without slightly shy. Really words that astonished people, even death not feel ashamed! Ye Che felt his face little hot, it not like he never being praised by girls. In Central City most of the unmarried girls are like and adore him very much, most of people who acquainted with him are know. But those people only said that he is so naturally handsome and brilliant. Never thought there will be someone uses “beautiful” toward him, which should be word for praising ladies. Being said by her, he should be angry but seeing how serious her facial expression when looked at him, that kind of sincere, he even losing a reason to

angry with her. Perhaps not letting her to find out how discomfort he actually is, he slapped the table powerful.

“I am asking you, do you listen to me?”

“Wei, you want to scare whom to death?” finally Long Mo Er gets back herself from her illusion world, using her hands to pat her chest. “Even though you are not willing to marry me, you really no need to use such trick to scare me.”

“Where have you heard the rumor I not willing to marry you?” Ye Che kind of surprised.

“Do I still need to hear from somewhere? On the wedding night, you were leaving the bride alone without any regret, and still to show off in the central city by going to the most well-known brothel, and stayed with the well-known person, Fei Yan. So this kind of action is called as willingly married me?” Long Mo Er pretending to angry said, who let him to speak so loud.

Listen about it, Ye Che is being provoked by the complained of the wife that he was forcing to married with. If that time wasn't being force by his Father and Mother, Ah Ding, Ruo Xuan, one of them should be married within this year. At that night, Ruo Xuan had met him, hoping him as her brother to protect her, she didn't want to get married with someone she doesn't love. Seeing his beloved youngest sister, crying such miserable, Ye Che's heart softens. As seeing from Ah Ding character that so playful and ignorant, there is nothing he could expect from him, that's why it only left him to sacrifice himself. Initially he planned to spend his life alone and free, only in such way he has losing his freedom. So, to whom he could express all his anger?

“So, what do you want?” he is trying to suppress his anger.

“What I want? You are the one who married me, don't you think that the person who should bear the responsibility is you? I am the only person who was being married into this family, being abandoned to side who is so pity, you still exposing that kind of expression, as if the one who being hurt is you.” Forcing herself to drop tears, acting as the wife that being abandoned, Long Mo Er takes an advantage to smile when Ye Che not pay attention, she really happy and admiring her acting ability.

Actually, Ye Che has saved her, she should be thankful to him. Expressionless

two persons, he able to step forward bravely, his personal character seems not bad. But, still need to stay at the Ye's household for some time, she is expecting herself and Ye Che, and all of the people, able to have good interaction. But, who asked Ye Che on the wedding night that day was escaping, so now she wanted to tease him.

“If not because of your stubborn who wanted married into my family, would I still feel aggrieved myself? You from Long's family is because seeing my Ye's family is wealthy this side, do you think to climb up into high society? Ah, but letting you to disappointed. None of our Ye's family possession you could take.” After Long Mo Er listened, Ye Che is laughing taunt. Finally, this woman is showing her real mask, almost being deceived by her innocent naïve acting.

“Wei, you are bastard, saying as if my family is such despicable!” Long Mo Er never thought he would say such thing about her, she really angry, really pissed off, how could he say such things about her?

“You this profligate son of the rich parent, do you think base on your disgusting money, you really that amazing? All your days just spend for worthless thing, do not have proper occupation. You get out, stay out from my line vision, I don't want to see you anymore.” With crying tone, Long Mo Er pushing him out. Since she was child until this big, this is the first time she being said by someone.

After locking the door, Long Mo Er is sitting on ground crying, tears dropping. How could it be like this? Doesn't she hoping to have peace and able get along with him? How could it be like this? Doesn't her initial plan for helping out her sister, thus she wanted to be the substitute bride and married into this family? How could it be like this? So does on other people views, their family is kind of seeking rich and honor?

.....

Why all are too different as she thought?

Chapter 7 Blaming Father and Mother

Ye Che leaving with his big steps, he didn't want to hear her fuss and noise. Initially he was so curious about her, but at the time he knew that she is Long Wan Er, all just vanished.

Actually the person who should angry is he, but why at that moment when the door closed, she was the one who seems to be hurt? She even emitting her anger bigger than he? Or was she showing her act to let him to see? He better to believe his last guessing.

“Third Young Master, Bumped into you are so good, Master and Madam are looking for you.” Butler Jiang has been asked by Ye Peng to find Ye Che and bring him back home early this morning, but on the time when Butler Jiang arrived at Bai Hua Lane, the people were told him that Third Young Master has back. He was quickly and hurried get back home. While other people told him that Third Young Master was here, he quickly came over. Finally he met Third Young Master.

“Understand, Now I will meet them.” Ye Che said very calm.

He didn't know what the reason, he has left Long Wan Er for quite long, but her miserable and sad expression still in his mind. It really makes he felt a bit ache in his heart. He swung his hands, wanting to erase that kind of feeling from his mind.

Unconsciously Ye Che has arrived at Ye Peng's study room, Butler Jiang pushed the door opened : “ Master, Madam, The Third Young Master is back.”

Ye Che walking into the middle of the room, his Father and Mother are there, it seems there is no preventing situation of “conflict”.

“Father, Mother.”

After Ye Che greeting, he sits down as told and even not forgetting to pour tea. One face filled with calm expression, not really care, Ye Peng displeased

expression.

“Butler Jiang, You may take your leave!”

“Yes, Master.” Butler Jiang pushed door, go out and closed the door.

“Fine, now could you tell me, what actually you are doing?” Ye Peng looking at his sloppy son, restrain himself not to lost his control.

“Father, I don’t think to do anything.” Ye Che gulp a cup of tea.

“Che Er, what actually you think? How will you treat Wang Er?” Madam Ye also feel helpless toward her son.

“Of course I will treat her as.... Wife.”

“Wife?” Ye Peng re-asked : “If you really think her as your wife, you wouldn’t spend night with that kind of woman who is offending public moral (prostitute) at the wedding night that day.”

“Father, please be careful with your words, Fei Yan is a good lady.” Ye Che seriously said.

“You such not filial son, because of that woman you dare to talk back to me, I have teach you since you was child to this big about virtuous men, do you have forget all of those?” more Ye Peng spoke his voice is getting louder.

“Lao Ye, don’t angry, please have good speak with Che Er.” Ye Fu Ren walking to Ye Peng’s side, helping him to reduce his anger.

“Che Er, your father health is not that good, you should be careful and have good speaks with your father, don’t make him angry.” Ye Fu Ren whimpered because she looking at her son and her husband has kind of conflicted atmosphere.

“Mother, don’t cry.” Ye Che stand up and helping Ye Fu Ren to sit.

At the moment in study room, it only leaving and disturb by the whipping tears sound.

.....

For quite long time, Ye Che started the conversation : “ Father, Mother. My reason to have and agree with this marriage, I think no one have better

understanding and clear about it, compare to both of you, I have make this kind of step back, then what both of you want me to do? Both of you please don't force me, or would you want to lose the second son because of this, wouldn't you?"

After Ye Che finished his words, it so clear the changing expression from both of his Father and Mother, actually he never think to make all the things become harder for both of his Father and Mother, he also doesn't have any option : Sorry, Father, Mother.

Later on he walked out from the study room.

Time has passed for long time, Ye Peng helplessly said : "Son is growing up."

"Lao Ye, you say, will Che Er really will do as Xuan Er, leaving us?" Ye Fu Ren asked indecisive.

"Still let nature to take its course! This time we might forcing Che Er too tight." Ye Peng replied to Ye Fu Ren question, but also seems to answer for himself.

"Lao Ye, we just want them to get married and born children earlier, stabilize and letting them to have happy life. Do we really make a mistake?"

"Their matter let them to settle by themselves, we can't take care of it for them. Now, the only person that we really sorry is Wan Er!"

"Wan Er is good young lady, Che Er attitudes towards her, we really too sorry for her."

"Perhaps letting Ruo Xuan and Li Zi come to company Wan Er, and you also need more time to go out, hoping in this way we can make up for all she loses."

"I understand."

Ah~ finally I get managed to up date this blog, hehehehehee



Chapter 8 simple conversation with Mu Rong Li Zi

It perhaps exhausting from crying, Long Mo Er felt asleep.

When she opened her eyes, the room has been illuminated by the sunset glow, the outside is leaving little bit brighter. She didn't know how long she has been slept, her shoulders little bit numb, while Lu Qun, her maid didn't know where she has been.

Pushing to open the window, the windy air blowing, and the weather is so comfortable hence Long Mo Er takes deep inhale the freezing air. Only for making she feels relax.

She lift her head up, looking at the sunset in sky, night is coming and only leaving the slightly darker blue sky color.

Long Mo Er sighted, determining to forget all displeasing things she experienced in here.

.....

Knock.. knock...

She turned her body to the knocking sound at the outside door.

Long Mo Er looked at the exquisite decorative door with fan carve, feeling little doubt whether to open or not, Lu Qun won't be kind of person who has this kind of manner, knocking door before entering, will it be him? Suddenly her heart feels as if being pulled, her fingers because of nervous are trembling.

"Sister Wan Er? I am Mo Rong Li Zi.

Hearing that is her sister in law's voice, she feels much relieved, her fingers become relax and hang down. She walking toward the door, opened the door :
"Big sister in law."

When she looking at Mo Rong Li Zi, she is exposing slightly smile.

"Sister Wan Er, Father and Mother have preparing dinner in big hall, let's we go together!" Mo Rong Li Zi said with smile.

"Go to big hall for dinner?" Long Mo Er kind surprised.

“Is there any problem Sister?” Do your family never having dinner together before?”

“No, it is not. We also more or less are having dinner with My Mother and My Father.” Long Mo Er explained.

“So?” Mo Rong Li Zi not really understood.

“I, I am not hungry.” Even she hasn’t eaten for almost one day and she really wanted to eat but he might be...

“Mei Mei, are you scared to meet with The Third Young Master?” looking at the affected expression of Long Mo Er, Mo Rong Li Zi thought perhaps this young lady who will meet her husband, she might feel little shy, so she smiled : “Mei Mei, you hasn’t meet the Third Young Master, but Mei Mei you just rest assured, I could be the guarantee, The Third Young Master is someone very handsome and good looking, while his attitude really someone not bad.”

“Ah?” listened to what Mo Rong Li Zi said, Long Mo Er really didn’t know how to response.

“Actually, you don’t need to worry, Third Young Master went out this early in the morning, helping father to manage the store, seems he would be come late today.” Mo Rong Li Zi even feel disbelieve of herself that she is telling lie in here.

Long Mo Er understood, that man won’t be appeared tonight, but how could he have been gone out early in the morning? How about hers and their displeasing meeting this afternoon? All of them are helping him to hide the truth.

Looking at Long Mo Er flat expression, Mo Rong Li Zi said : “Mei Mei, The Third Young Master really a nice person, he really a good man that worth to entrust yourself. Those the men of Ye’s family, as long as they really fall in love with someone, they will treat that person good forever, loving that person for the entire of their life time. You should remember my words, as long as you work hard, I don’t lie to you, see how Ye Yu treating me.”

“Big sister in law, I do really envy you because marry one good husband. Someone who could really understand this kind of feeling, she must be someone experiencing it that’s why you are really sure of what you said!” Long Mo Er said

in front Mo Rong Li Zi who has happy expression, then she understands how deep the bond between she and her sister in law.

“Mei Mei, you should remember what I told you, it won’t be wrong. You should hold tightly the Third Young Master, understand?”

Ng.” Long Mo Er nodding her head, toward Mo Rong Li Zi who is so caring, she really touched. But she and Ye Che won’t be husband and wife forever.

“Mei Mei, let’s we heading to the hall!”

“Big sister in law, couldn’t I...”

“Cannot, you should go. Today dinner is the first dinner that you have with all the Ye’s family members, you are the main role, how could you not be there?” Mo Rong Li Zi didn’t give any opportunity to let Long Mo Er to finish her words, just cut it directly.

“Big sister in law, I still need finished to say the words.” Long Mo Er feels little funny : “ But, big sister in law can’t I preparing myself first (to make herself presentable)?”

“Oh? Alright!” Mo Rong Li Zi paused for a moment, then she finally gets her sense and able to response.

“Big sister in law, I will be quick.”



Long Mo Er first dinner inside Ye Residence with her husband family. She is liked by the Ye's family and so does she, likes them very much. Her in laws treating her so good so far even Ye Fu Ren (her mother in law) treating her as if her own daughter.

She has fun dinner, smiles, laughing, chatting while eating...
But the atmosphere just turn weird when Ye Che joined them.

Chapter 9 Banquet

Under the care of Mo Rong Li Zi, Long Mo Er has changed her clothes with the long pink gown, stitching with little décor of white lace flower, she changed to be pure innocent person, more lively person.

She is really beautiful.

When they arrived at the big hall, all the people are looking and waiting for both of them.

“Father Mother, sorry to let you waiting, I come little late.” Long Mo Er sees that all of them have been waiting for her, she really feel little embarrassed.

“No. come here, Wan Er sits beside mother.” Ye Fu Ren, biological mother of Ye Che pulled Long Mo Er hand, let her to sit beside her.

“Wan Er, Che Er has been asked to manage the store, probably the business are too much to handle so he might...” Ye Peng is starting to tell her the words that all of them has agreed before.

“Father, doesn’t matter. The business of Ye’s family is so big, The Third Young Master should help. Let’s we start eating!” Long Mo Er didn’t want all of them feel awkward, it better for her to continue acting as if she doesn’t know anything, just play along with their lies.

Long Mo Er looking at all corners of the room, Ye Che really doesn’t appear. Doesn’t know why, she clearly understand that he won’t appear, clearly she understand that both of them are dislike each other, she also understand that after he said that kind of words she should hate him... but, inside the bottom of her heart, she still give a hope for him to appear.

“Father, let’s we start the dinner, all of us are so hungry.” Suddenly Ye Ding said.

“That’s right, Father. Let’s start, Wan Er might also hungry.” Ye Yu said to both of the elders.

“Eat.”

Once Ye Peng said “eat”, everyone is grabbing their chopstick, smiling while eating.

“Third sister in law, come to eat this simmer fried meat (Chao Sio/Hong Shao Rou)” the one always calm Ruo Xuan said, she puts that piece of meat into Wan Er’s rice bowl.

“Thank you, Ruo Xuan Mei Mei.”

“Woo, Xiao Mei, you are really biased, I am the one who like the simmer fried meat the most, why don’t you pick it for me. It seems not only mother who is biased, but you also biased.” Ye Ding starts to protest.

“Ding Er, be serious.” Ye Fu Ren Said.

“Mother, I am really serious! See, I am this cute and also like by everyone, don’t you love me?”

“I really feel helpless with you!” even Ye Fu Ren said that words but her face expressed loving smile.

Only at this moment, Long Mo Er and Ye Ruo Xuan lifting their chopstick together, put the simmer fried meat to Ye Ding’s rice bowl, then they are smiling each other.

At the moment Long Mo Er sit down, her vision line saw person in the courtyard, suddenly her smiling face vanished. From Long Mo Er expression, her vision line, she could feel that Ye Che standing isn’t far from her.

“Che Er, you came back.” After Ye Fu Ren saw Ye Che she smiles, finally he willing to appear in front of Wan Er.

“Father, Mother.” Ye Che not in hurried walking to inside.

When he saw Long Mo Er, he only took a glance, standing between she and his mother, facing toward Ye Fu Ren.

“Butler Jiang, put additional chair for The Third Young Master beside Wan Er.” Ye Fu Ren said.

“Yes.” Butler Jiang directly adding and put the chair for Third Young Master

next to Wan Er. “Third Young Master, please take a seat.”

Long Mo Er could feel that Ye Che is sitting beside her, she also able to hear her own jumping heart beats and moreover she could sense that he is looking at her.

“Wan Er, why you lower your head?” Mo Rong Li Zi seeing Long Mo Er timid, can't help for asking her.

“Ah, nothing!” Long Mo Er hurried lift her head up and answered, after she said, she takes a glance to Ye Che, she thinks to avoid him. But from Ye Che calm expression, Long Mo Er can sense that he and she as if nothing ever happens between them, sense as if this is the first time they are meeting each other, how could he be so composed? And why should she feel so much worried? If he could act as if nothing ever happen, so Long Mo Er will also able to do so.

“All keeps on eating ah, why stop eating?” once Long Mo Er lift her head up, she has changed to be another person who is more composure and even put sweet smile.

“Right, eat.” Ye Ding added.

After Ye Che joined, no one dare said anything, all are eating quietly, all of them are alike, “you see me while I see you”, all of them focus to both of the main role, all the happy comfortable atmosphere is disappeared.

Long Mo Er feels eating dinner as if doing military things, won't he be not here? How come he chooses this time to appear? Aiya, should all of us keep on silent like this? Mother ah, why don't you burst something out?

Don't know how long time passed, finally Ye Ding said: “I full already.”

“Let eat more little bit.” Ye Fu Ren said.

Ye Ding facing Ye Fu Ren eyes: “Mother, I am not a pig, why should I eat so much?” when he stands himself up, he said to Long Mo Er : “Third sister in law, after you finished your dinner, ask my Third Brother to take you strolling for getting familiar to our Ye's residence. I go back first.” Waiting for Ye Che to glare Ye Ding, Ye Ding has disappeared already.

10



Can you guess about this chapter?

For me, this chapter is one of the good start for Ye Che and Long Mo Er marriage life. you guys ever asked me, who is fall in love for the first time, who with whom? Ye Che or Long Mo Er?

He kissed her under the moonlight without saying how he feels about her, while she is confusing with his act.

He likes her.

She wavers.

Chapter 10 First Kiss under Moon light

Doesn't know at what time, the crescent moon is hanging in the sky. The moon light is piercing into the gap of the tree's leaves, moving according to windy air. The flowers is shrinking each others, everything is so quiet.

At the garden, Long Mo Er and Ye Che are not speaking.

Long Mo Er secretly gazing on the Ye Che's face, looking at his figure contour which is obviously, the perfect thick lips, high nose, then the charming pair of eyes, he indeed perfect, none of his expression is more mystical even after being light by the moonlight.

Should she and he reconcile? This kind of silent is really makes people feel hard to bear. She still need to stay for some of time in Ye residence, still need to think a way how to leave from Ye residence, if she still dwelling in this intense situation with Ye Che, how could she retreat herself from this mess? How could she convince and persuade Ye Che?

But those harsh words which said by Ye Che, it wasn't easy to forget. Will he starting to oppose her with harshness if she opened her mouth, say something?

To speak until here, suddenly Long Mo Er missed her elder sister. She only leaving her home and married into this family for the second day. Only in this short time, it has happen many things. Ye Peng and Ye Fu Ren loving and caring, the passionate Mo Rong Li Zi, the limitless concern of the brother and sister of the Ye's...

All of them are nice and good people, they always treating her as the Ye's daughter in law. Only this person who is in front of her, the only person who always criticized her, she really wants to tell all her troubles to her elder sister. Before she always has her sister, but now...

She wants to leave this place, she wants to go home. Ng~~~~! Father, Mother, I really miss you!

"What are you thinking?"

Long Mo Er thought being cut, she raised her head looked at Ye Che. His face is showing little bit gentleness, any reason for it? He even starting the conversation, why should he put attention to hers? Should she reply his question?

Ye Che didn't understand how could he speak with her without he realized, he never thought to start the conversation at the beginning. He only sees that her face shown kind of lonely and sad expression, those words just flow and burst without he realised.

"I...." Long Mo Er still hesitated.

"I still think... we... can or can't living in peace." After Long Mo Er said, she hurried lower her head.

Ye Che is thinking, does he really that scary? She looks so afraid of him, other people who see the scene must be thinking that he is bullying her. Doesn't know seeing her gesture making him feel displeased, didn't she really happy when having dinner with all the people? Does only he is an exception? The disappeared of Ye Che's charming eyes, make her hard to guess what he thought.

Not having Ye Che answered, Long Mo Er is kind worries, just wanting to know what Ye Che's thought.



On the time she raised her head up, a black shadow envelop her. She looked Ye Che is standing up in front of her, get so closer to her, his pair of deep eyes is getting closer to her. She even could smell his unique body's fragrant.

She even feeling that her face is getting warmer, her heart is beating without pattern as if jumping out.

"You... what are you thinking to do?" she nervously asking, her voice just being

blow by the winds, so weak.

Ye Che is lowering his head, suddenly he stick his lip to Long Mo Er lips.

Long Mo Er blank at the moment, unconsciously closed her eyes, feeling whether she will die or not.

What are you doing?

At the moment all is paused.

“Wei, using your nose to breathe.” Ye Che realized her reaction, using his calmness voice tone to speak. Initially, he only wanted to punish her, he never thought that her scent is so good. If not because seeing her shock expression, he won't think to release her very quickly.

Slowly opened her eyes, Long Mo Er only could depend on Ye Che's body, only to make herself stand, she shouldn't fall in to the ground.

Her consciousness slowly by slowly back, she heard the heart beat of hers and Ye Che's.

Why he should do that kind of thing toward hers?

Ye Che raised his fingers up gently stroking Long Mo Er's face, letting her to see him, looking at Long Mo Er perplexed expression after their kissed. At the moment, Ye Che feels his mood changed to be somewhat better, he used his hand to support her body and meticulously looking at her face. He used very low voice said : “living in peaceful, I had done it. It is as what you want, isn't it?”

“hag?” Long Mo Er still confused.

“I have showed friendly movement and gesture!” Ye Che could feel the person body that he supported soft and smooth, letting him hard to release her.

Long Mo Er step backward to release herself from being touch by him, at that moment there was no way for her able to think.

“Hopefully... we could live in peace and happy.” Replied Long Mo Er with extremely soft voice.



Chapter 11 Long Mo Er's worries

It has been passed for days; Ye Che hasn't appear in front of Long Mo Er.

Whether they are not meeting each other or because of Long Mo Er is still avoiding to meet him, Long Mo Er is leaving all the event or place where he is appearing. Even two days ago, she hurried rejecting all the invitation of Ye Fu Ren, Mo Rong Li Zi, Ruo Xuan and anyone invitation for her. Only because of she is afraid to meet Ye Che.

Long Mo Er feels and thinks till her head as if explode, but she still doesn't have any answer, actually what the purpose of Ye Che did such thing toward her that night. She really didn't know, if she meet Ye Che, how should she facing him.

It has passed many days, but that night scenery still makes she hard to breathe and it is continuing pop ups in her mind, even the scent of Ye Che's body, she remembered very clear.

Ye Che, Ye Che, Ye Che....

She still able to recall and memorize his deep black eyes that looking at her, she still able to feel that soft lip which kissed her.

Every time she thinks about it, her face blush red with faster heart beat, what is going on with her?

She hates today's herself, how she is so inconsistent, why she not just get away from the illusion, the today's her is not same as the before she who is so

happy and carefree from worries, Long Mo Er. Does she sick?

“Miss, what happen to you?” Asked Lu Qun who is beside her, she has sensed that her Miss being so weird for these last two days. It started from the day when her Miss back from dinner, her face was beet red when she came back, asking her what was happen, she not burst any words out.

Later on, her Miss is starting to stare blankly, once she starting to her lost thought mode, it seems won't end. There was a time, she was sitting at one place for whole day, once she frowned, other time her face blushing red, and others time she showed shocking expression....

She is worrying of her Miss, her Miss is someone very active since she was a child, as if her energy never get ended, but this time, no matter what she does, her Miss happiness level is decreasing bit by bit. She doesn't know what to do. Lao Ye, Fu Ren, Big Miss, please give back the old Little Miss to me. If something happen to her Little Miss, how could she explain to her Lao Ye?

“I, is there something wrong with me? Lu Qun?” Long Mo Er asked.

“Miss, that night what was happen to you?”

“Nothing, nothing!” Long Mo Er nervously answered; suddenly her face is blushing from pinkish to red beet.

“So why you face is blushing red? I am really worried about you!”

“Am I?” Long Mo Er hurried to touch her face with both of her hand, feeling it little bit warmer. She only dares to shoot quick glance to her, because she afraid Lu Qun might find out.

She turned her body, wanting to walk out, doesn't want Lu Qun to find out how strange she is.

“Miss, where are you going?” Lu Qun followed her.

“walking around.” Long Mo Er Said.

She doesn't want anyone to find out, that she is embarrassing and at complete loss, she is uneasy and she is in mess. All of these (everything that she feels) should be blame that damn man, if not because of him, she won't be afraid Lu Qun to find out her problems. She looks so weird and little bit odds, but actually

she is really a normal person.

While that damn man, she doesn't know what he is doing for all the day, perhaps he doesn't have slightly thought for it and she might be the only person who takes the matter serious while he might spend his day happy go lucky without any worries and serious thought.

“Oh My God, this really not fair for me!” Long Mo Er murmured.

“Actually what is going on with me? I don't want to act as if I weirdoes; I want to be the normal me!”

12

Long Mo Er mind still flying...

She act even weird and strange after the incident being kissed by Ye Che. Her maid, Lu Qun can't do anything except keep on following her Miss and watch over her.

Since Lu Qun really worried about her Miss, she only could beg Long Mo Er for taking good herself since her condition kind worrying Lu Qun.

When Long Mo Er walking, she and Lu Qun discovered hidden cottage inside Ye's residence which is one of the Ye's family secret, this secret cottage is related to "Ye's taboo topic" inside the residence even to be talk, especially for Ye Che.



Chapter 12 Secret Room

Only for forgetting the entire mess, headache and irritating matters, Long Mo Er is walking faster and faster.

“Miss, actually what is happen to you?” Lu Qun pairs of hand pulled her skirt up little bit then followed her Miss.

Carelessly, Long Mo Er falls because of stepping on her own robe. “peng” she falls to ground. Lu Qun seeing Long Mo Er felt down, she was panicking and run towards her Miss, helping her to stand up.

“Miss, are you hurt?” Lu Qun checking Long Mo Er’s body.

“Knees!” Long Mo Er creased, using her hands she pointed at her small leg.

“Let me see.” Lu Qun raised her Miss skirt little bit, touching her white gown. “The skin is peeled little bit and reddish, when we back, I will apply medicine. Fortunately the wound not bad!” after Lu Qun checked, she helped her to tidy her clothes.

After seeing Long Mo Er’s innocent expression, Lu Qun couldn’t hold herself and said : “Miss, if you really don’t want to tell what was happen to you, at least you should taking good care of yourself, don’t makes people worry of you. You acted so weird lately!”

“I am sorry, letting you worried about me!” Long Mo Er just feeling that she only think about herself, but forgetting other’s feeling that surrounded her, she is not that good anymore. Ye Fu Ren, Big sister in law, Ruo Xuan Mei Mei, all of them, they must be worried too! She is thinking for these past two days of her attitude toward them, hard for her not to put blame on herself.

“Miss, Lu Qun only wish to see the old Miss of you!”

“Ng, starting from today, I won’t make you guys worry about me anymore.” Long Mo Er promised, she wants to be person who is bring happiness for others people, and she doesn’t want to be like this, letting others to worry about her.

You damn Ye Che, get lost from beside me!

After her mood changes, she realized how sky become more blue, the sun shine even more brilliant and the flower become extremely spread sweet fragrance.

Everything changed to be so beautiful and good!

“Ah! This small cottage is so unique!” after walking for some time, passing through the exotic flower and rare plant, there is small cottage which attracted Long Mo Er’s vision.

After listen to Long Mo Er and her surprising expression, Lu Qun followed hers vision line saw, “It really a small cottage.”

“Miss, The Ye’s residence is wealthy landlord, how could there is a small cottage that being covered, don’t you think this kind strange?” Lu Qun didn’t understand.

Long Mo Er also thinks about it, kind strange. “Let’s get inside to see! Perhaps this cottage is one of the Ye’s residence uniqueness? Let’s go, Lu Qun, we get inside!” Long Mo Er can’t hold her curiosity, stepping forward to get closer.

After arrived at the cottage, she has been standing for half day, looking right and left, finally Long Mo Er really impatient, walking closer to the door and wanting to open the cottage’s door.

“Miss, this is no good, we don’t know what place it is, who’s live inside and directly entering, isn’t really good, is it?” Lu Qun scared a bit, moreover Ye’s residence isn’t their Long’s residence.

“How about we knocking the door, don’t you think it also gesture to show our politeness?” after Long Mo Er said, she knocked the cottage’s door, and then using loud voice asked: “anyone? Is there anyone?” but there is no one answered.

“No one answered, let’s we go inside and see for moment, after that we will leave, it seems no one will find out, won’t be any problem!” Long Mo Er raised her hands, preparing to push the cottage’s door.

“Third Young Madam!” suddenly there is someone called her at back.

“Ah!” Long Mo Er and Lu Qun shocked as if they were thief whom caught red

handed.

Turned her back, after Long Mo Er saw that was Butler Jiang, she felt relieved.

“Butler Jiang, so coincidentally!” Long Mo Er forcing to smile.

Usually Butler Jiang always smile whenever seeing others people, but this time his expression is kind of gloomy, absolutely not that usual smile expression. Long Mo Er kind surprised with his expression. Don't know what to say at the moment, nervous, her hands randomly moving.

“Please Third Young Madam leaving this place!” Butler Jiang unfriendly expression.

“This place? Oh, okay!” Long Mo Er still witting, looking at Butler Jiang, slowly walking away from the cottage, while Lu Qun followed at her back.

After leaving and not seeing Butler Jiang, Long Mo Er slightly felt little bit at ease.

“It is dangerous, Miss!”

What place actually is it? Why the Butler Jiang asking me for leaving? He only an employee, how could he so impudent to Zhu Zi (Master)? Who is living there? What is the secret that hide inside that cottage which can't be told? Long Mo Er curious!

Ah~ it better to find big sister in law, she is so kind, she might tell me!

13 – 14

I really have an extremely good mood which greatly improving “my energy” for past days.

Please let me share some of it :

Happy Birthday to myself, finally I grow older by another one year. Hopefully I could be maturer little bit since most of time I do act childish and stubborn

Happy to know finally one of my friend could fly to Philippine, pursuing her new life and better career. (while I hope could visit Australia soon ^.^) Congratz to my younger sister finally she able to “endure” working since this is her first job.

Etc❤️❤️❤️

Well, it better to move to the new chapters...

Chapter 13 Business Fluctuation

“Big sister in law.” Long Mo Er is so happy called out Mo Rong Li Zi who is busying.

“Wan Er Mei Mei, why you are coming?” Mo Rong Li Zi is putting down her account book, surprised looking at Long Mo Er said : “This is the first time that Mei Mei come to visit me, I feel bit honor and surprised!”

“Big sister in law, I come to see you!” Long Mo Er holding Mo Rong Li Zi’s hand, acted coquettishly.

Mo Rong Li Zi sees how Long Mo Er acted alike children, she smiled : “Burst out, why are you looking for me?”

“Aiya, Big sister in law, how could you know I have something, then looking for you? Are you fortune teller?”

“I am not a fortune teller but I know and see clearly you have something!”

“Ah? Really?”

Lu Qun who stays aside is observing. It won’t possible that Big Young Madam could see others thought. Won’t the real status of her Miss being guessed too, will her?

Long Mo Er and Lu Qun dumbfounded expression, makes Mo Rong Li Zi burst laughing : “ Stupid girl, you think that I am goddess! Who could see people’s heart, actually I lie to you, just playing and kidding you. You are so naïve little girl, letting all your matter obviously written on your face.”

“Ah? Really?” Long Mo Er touching her face.

“Alright lah, only kidding you, said, what kind of matter do you want to ask?” Mo Rong Li Zi asked : “let me make a guess, will it something related to the Third Young Master?”

For a moment, Long Mo Er face turned to beet red, she panic tried to explain to Mo Rong Li Zi : “Not about him, nothing related to Ye Che!”

“Is it?” Mo Rong Li Zi laughed, looking at this little girl Long Mo Er, it seems that she won’t guess wrong, there might be something happen between Long Mo Er and the Third Young Master, both of them may get along well! They even made Mother and I worried for half of day, but now, I should let Mother to see, so Mother will be rest assured more!

“It true, really true that is nothing related to him.” Long Mo Er moving her head randomly, just afraid of being mistaken by Mo Rong Li Zi.

“He he he, so what do you want to know?” Mo Rong Li Zi asked her, doesn’t want to play anymore.

For long time, finally Long Mo Er opened her mouth : “ Big sister in law, the south courtyard there is some of thatched cottage, what place it is?”

This kind of question makes Mo Rong Li Zi to ask Long Mo Er : “How could you go there?”

“I am boring, doing nothing, unconsciously walking until there, who is living in that cottage? And what secret is being kept in that cottage?”

“Ah. This. I really can’t tell you. If you really want to know, you should ask Third Young Master. This question only by the Third Young Master who could give you the answer. Sorry, Mei Mei, this is the secret of the Ye’s family.”

“The secret of the Ye’s family? Is it that important?”

“I think it considered as an important!” Mo Rong Li Zi gave an apology expression.

“Big sister in law, really give you hard time.”

“Don’t be so courteous to me.” She paused for a while then continues said: “If you want to ask Third Young Master, it better to wait bit longer!”

“Why?”

“The business of the Ye’s family not really good for these past two days, Ye Yan and Third Young Master are so busy outside and inside.”

“Not good?”

“In the past until now, normally the Ye’s metal business such as Accessories,

gems, jewelry, cloth material, leathers, medicine, etc are always get profit, but after the price being standardized the selling keeps on decreasing, on the contrary Zhang Ji which always at our back has very good business and also it is taking some of our big customers, I just finished completing all the accounting.”

“Zhang Ji, I ever heard from my Father, but it isn’t as big as Ye’s family business, how could it has better business than Ye’s?”

“It is because they are envious with Ye’s business, doing some despicable things at our back and even taking some of our customer.”

“They really vile person.” Long Mo Er is angry said: “How can there is such despicable person!”

“Mei Mei, business an equal to battlefield! Lock in constant strife, malicious libel. Simple to say it can’t be prevented!”

“How about to expose them!”

“ha ha ha, Mei Mei you are so naïve, human is vicious self! That isn’t thing we can do about it since we couldn’t provide the evidence.”

Chapter 14 Heart Beat when Meet

How could my world being in such chaos and confusion?

Every time that easy going and modest of her, those happiness, freedom, easy and comfortable, peaceful life, does it only on the surface? Vicious people? Is it true? Does it really alike what big sister in law said? Or only Father and Mother who are always showing me all the beauty of life?

How could it be like that?

“Peng!” Long Mo Er’s body bumped into the warm wall, losing her balance then fall down.

Another second, a strong and well build figure hold on her waist, supported her body.

“Could you be careful when you are walking?” a familiar voice spoke on Long Mo Er’s ear.

She lifted her head up, looked into that charming eyes, again those memories being recalled out from her mind. She panicking pushed Ye Che, stepped back couple steps, bumped into Lu Qun’s body.

“Miss, are you okay?” Lu Qun with her hands supported Long Mo Er.

“Ng.” Long Mo Er didn’t dare to look at Ye Che, her eyes looks at anywhere only to avoid Ye Che’s eyes, for once again her heart beat so fast as if it going to jump up, she grabbed tight her waist clothes.

Why every time after she spoke with big sister in law, at the other moment he would show up? What should I said?

“I am really curious, every time you meet me, you always that nervous and panic? Am I really that scary?” finally Ye Che spoke out his perplex. Last time, she is also showing this kind of panicking expression.

Long Mo Er tried to lift her head and said : “I am not... scared.” After she realized the intense gazed of Ye Che, her words doesn’t have any persuasiveness.

“Is it?” Ye Che not really believe on her.

“Yes, yes ah.” Long Mo Er nodding her head, still not forgetting to avoid Ye Che’s vision line.

“Whatever, I still have things to do, don’t have time to company chatting with you.” Ye Che won’t think to matter it more.

“Are you planning to go out?” Long Mo Er asked, forgetting herself that she is avoiding him, straightly asking Ye Che, thinking what Big sister in law said before, she really want to know what is going on with Ye’s family business?

“This past two days the business not really good. I am going to fetch some items, and then I still need to go back to store.” Ye Che gave real answered. He turned his body to walk out.

“Can I go with you to the store?” Long Mo Er question makes Ye Che to pause his steps.

She just wants to know whether she could help or not, she also understand that he might not agree.

“Do you want to go with me?” Ye Che thought that he heard wrong.

“Yes, I heard from big sister in law, these days the business of the Ye’s family not really good. That’s why I think to give a help.” His expression seems not really believe, letting Long Mo Er not really happy, knowing that he will refuse, but still she burst out what she wants to do.

“Do you know how to trade? Do you think that the Ye’s business is something that you can give a hand?” she wants to help? She really too naïve!

“I might not understand about business, or ever get in touch or engage to such things, but still I want to go and see.” Long Mo Er voice become softer and softer, he was right. Everything she doesn’t know, she really can’t help anything, thus even she goes, still she can’t help?

“Well, you and I, together we go!” Ye Che didn’t understand which nerve that wrong with him, he just agreed.

Hearing that unexpected agreement, Long Mo Er stuffed.

“You are allowed to go but remember you should quiet and calm on my side,

not allowing to disturb others working.” After Ye Che finished, he walked out.

“Miss, move faster, The Third Young Master has been walking out already.” Lu Qun pushed dumbfounded Long Mo Er. Not stopping shook her head, Miss really Miss, she even dares to beg Third Young Master.

“Oh!” finally Long Mo Er able to response, suddenly hurried to chase till outside.

15

Thank you for you guys wishes...

This year also one a great year of my birthday

I have receive so many blessing and good wishes, feel so grateful for every moment of my life.

Thanks

Chapter 15 Look Forward inside the Horse Carriage

The horse carriage is going along the border of Ye's residence wall, slowly get into the bustling street.

Long Mo Er heard the resellers selling voices from inside the horse carriage, the trading in two and three. That kind of crowded and noises are always attracting her, those things are just making her impatience only to pop her head out to see.

When she was at home, her Father never allowed her to go out because she is born as female. That's why, every time she wants to go out just alike last time, searching for Ye Che in Bai Hua Lane, she should disguise herself as little maid or little boy.

Even though she had gone out, she still worries whether her father would find out or not, that's why she never really have time playing till been satisfied. She should to go back home earlier. Never thought that replace her sister married into Ye's family, she could openly and without any fear to go outside. Thinking last time when she met Ye Che for the first time, she also secretly went out.

He he he he, finally today she really audacious going out to the main street.

She slowly takes a look to Ye Che's face, he is reading books, very focus. Long Mo Er corner of lip is lifting up, she lifting up the curtain one of the horse carriage's window, looking to outside.

Very beautiful scenery, so sweet holding hands couples... woah! And also Tang Hu Lu (sugarcoated haws on stick / sugarcoat fruits on stick)! Long Mo Er shouted and pointed out only inside her heart, her eyes sigh is yearning for it, her expression just changed.

The person who sits beside Long Mo Er, Lu Qun also showed similar expression, she and Long Mo Er are exposing kind of "Wanting" expression. It so obvious, Lu Qun who always follows Long Mo Er, has been influenced by her.

Both of them are showing that kind of expression!

Forgetting about the time, forgetting about the place and even forgetting there still someone beside them, Ye Che!

Drawing out the attention from books, Ye Che looked at that two persons who sitting inside the horse carriage but their eyes are looking outside from the carriage's window, don't know what they are looking at. On Long Mo Er face expression, he could see and sense kind of enthusiast, strong expectation! He couldn't resist to look outside, what kind of things that so fascinating her.

He bend up his body, makes his face closer to Long Mo Er, he tries to look from small gap but the gap really too small, he impatience said : "what is it on outside?"

"Ah!" Long Mo Er panicked hearing Ye Che's voice, naturally she turned back her body.

"Ah!" Long Mo Er tapped and shouting, as the result their distance is too close, she hurried to turn herself but her forehead is bumping to Ye Che's chin.

Ye Che helplessly took his seat back, using his hand to stroke his chin, the glimmer of sunlight felt to cover Long Mo Er's hand when she also stroking her forehead.

This woman always has thing that makes him speechless, she always acts like this!

Really wondering and curious what is inside her brain, what kind of trick she played?

Or does she really afraid of him? Or, does he really that scary? How many times already he sense her, as if she afraid of him?

"Miss, are you hurt?" Lu Qun panicking, both of her hands stroking Long Mo Er's forehead.

"Me, hurt ah!" Lu Qun touched her forehead, making Long Mo Er shouting.

"Wei, are you okay?" Ye Che asking her when he heard her voice, coldly asked her, in his speaking tone there is slightly warm attention without he noticed.

This stupid woman, just asking for her own trouble!

After heard what Ye Che said, Long Mo Er forgot her pain and hurried asking him: “I am sorry, really sorry, are you alright?” she didn’t forget that she had bumped into him.

“I am fine.”

“ha ha, it seems that I am so stupid!” Long Mo Er regrets on herself who always cause problem whenever with him, she starting to piss off with herself.

Fortunately, you realized about your own self! Said Ye Che in his heart.

“What were you see just now?” Ye Che asked her the question that he wanted to know.

“Nothing important, I did see there were lots of thing in the bustling street.” Long Mo Er sincerely answered.

“Third Young Master, we arrived.”

Actually he still wanted to ask others question but the horse carriage has stopped, the curtain is lifted.

Ye Che nodding his head and said to Long Mo Er : “ Arrived, get off.”

After he said, Ye Che is the first person who got off from the horse carriage, and then he stretches his hand to help Long Mo Er. Long Mo Er stuffed looking at the wide spread hand palm of Ye Che, but she didn’t hesitate to give her hands to him. By supported of Ye Che’s arm, Long Mo Er got off from the horse carriage.

16

Ah~ Sorry for late up date. I was busy because works and visiting my big family new house which will be finished at the beginning of year (*excited*) I will make the separate post about that amazing house with it's history

Chapter 16 Visiting The Store for First Time

After she able to stand well, Long Mo Er looked at the store in front of her eyes, at the above it is hanging words “Bi Xiao Xuan”.

A middle age old man who has round and stout face hurried walking out from inside the store, he is walking hurried and fast to the in front of horse carriage, bowing to Ye Che, said : “Third Young Master, welcomed you!” While Ye Che is nodding his head.

Then, he gives a glance to the elegant Long Mo Er who standing beside Ye Che: “Third Young Master, who is this lady?”

Ye Che looked at Long Mo Er facial expression, he didn’t know how to answer.

A wife? Should he give such answer to the others? Would he admit her?

At the moment of his hesitation, Long Mo Er throwing sweet smile: “Hi, I am Long Wan Er.”

“Oh, San Sao Fu Ren (Third Young Master’s wife/Third Young Madam), this lowly stupid because not to recognize you.” The middle age man really likes this Third Young Madam who is standing in front him without any arrogance, it seems the Third Young Master and Third Young Madam are both nice persons.

“It doesn’t matter, this is my first time come here, it very normal if you can’t recognize me!” Long Mo Er is amiable and approachable (easy going) person.

“Come, Third Young Master, Third Young Madam, please coming.”

“Let’s go, Lu Qun.” Long Mo Er holding Lu Qun’s hand.

Both of them walking, together entering the store.

When Ye Che and Long Mo Er sat down, Xiao Si (the male servant) served them with infused tea, putting the tea in table.

“Tong Po (Uncle Tong), please brings out the cool and refreshment ointment for swelling.” Ye Che said to the middle age man who standing not far from him.

Even though he didn’t understand why the Third Young Master asking for the

ointment, Uncle Tong still asking Xiao Si to bring out the ointment from inside hall for Ye Che.

“Lu Qun, put the ointment to her forehead.”

“Yes.” Lu Qun received the ointment from Ye Che, her hands gently stroking and applying Long Mo Er swelling forehead with the ointment.

Refresh and cooling feeling, at the moment she feels it absorbing into her skin and as if it also absorb into her heart.

Actually the effect after bumping didn't really hurt, it wasn't that pain, but because of Ye Che's attentive, Ye Che's concern, makes Long Mo Er feels her heart so sweet, really sweet, as if she has eaten honey.

She feels this kind of feeling, curious and looking at the four corners.

In the white wall there are hanging lots type of calligraphy, at one glance it easy to recognize famous artist works. About the words, there is an old and hardy, then the bold and generous ones, then the coarse and wild... and about the paint, there is the mountain and water, the green forest... and others are indescribable elegant painting. While in the table and cabinet are filled with brushes with any size, blotting papers, inkstone...

Oh actually Ye's family is also running this kind of elegant business.

If big sister is in here, she would like this kind of things, while she, this fake Long Wan Er doesn't have any interest with these kinds of thing, after looking at these things, her head starting to ache. It seems she really only the common person!

Didn't know when, Ye Che has walking towards other side and have discuss something with Uncle Tong.

Long Mo Er boring and sit back to her seat, while Ye Che having serious conversation.

How could he is so good looking? At the first time she met him, she has understood, but as time passes, he looks more and more good looking and attractive. But why he frown his forehead? Does the problem really hard for him to solve?

Perhaps he did sense Long Mo Er's vision, Ye Che raised his head up looking at Long Mo Er. As if getting an electric shock, Long Mo Er quickly looked at other sides, her heart suddenly gets in wild, even breathing is hard for her, what is going on?

She afraid, afraid of herself, her heart seems to change and losing at her own self.

17

As I promised last year, I will try to provide you guys better translation so you may experience better reading. Reflecting from last translation project, I know, I still have many weakness.

The translation is credited to myself and the proofreading is credited to Anna. In chapter 17 for once again Ye Che tries to show his affection towards Long Mo Er but he did in the wrong way. Instead showing affection, he just scared Long Mo Er by his “rough” attitudes.

Chapter 17

Visiting The Store for First Time (2)

“Alright, leaving the matter like this, let me carefully examine it for two days, and tomorrow I will come back again.”

“I understand, I can handle it, Third Young Master please be rest assured.”

Ye Che and Uncle Tong stood up, walking while speaking, their conversation was just too confusing for Long Mo Er, so she also stood up and said: “Are we leaving?”

Ye Che replied to her with “hm”.

“Third Young Madam, if you have time please come again.” Uncle Tong is hoping to have an opportunity to meet this kind of not artificial and not pretentious Zhu Zi (Master). Even though they have little interaction, but he could sense that she is different compared with other women. Nowadays, to be able find a Master who is able to think about their servant and employees is really hard; furthermore he sincerely comes to like this young lady from the bottom of his heart.

“Are we really leaving? This fast?” She said biting her lip.

“If the Third Young Madam likes this place, you can stroll here for a while” said Uncle Tong.

Why we are leaving so fast? Why should we go back this early to the Ye’s residence? She still hasn’t started to play; it is not easy for her to be able to walk in the bustling street, not to mention she hasn’t stepped on the street yet.

Ah~~~~~

If they really wanted to get back home this soon, Ah~ this is really so disappointing! If earlier she knew that only like this she would get back home, it would be better for her not to look dumbfounded at Ye Che, she wouldn’t waste her precious time in such a way.

To re-think, it is really obvious that her eyes showed such gloomy sight.

This is the first time for Ye Che to experience this kind of situation; there is nothing that he doesn't know about Long Mo Er's facial expression, all her problems and matters are so clearly written on her face.

But he still ignored the change of her face and walked out from "Bi Xiao Xuan".

Lu Qun pulls Long Mo Er's dress, reminding her that Ye Che has walked far away.

In her vision field when Ye Che almost disappears from the main door, Long Mo Er hurriedly says good bye to Uncle Tong and runs to catch up to him.

Lu Qun glances a sorry look to Uncle Tong and follows at her back to chase her Miss and Master.

After those three people leave, Uncle Tong understands and then starts laughing.

"Wei, wait for me." Long Mo Er with small steps chases after Ye Che.

"Where are you going? Aren't we going back to the Ye residence? Why are you walking the other way? Why don't you wait for the horse carriage?" She really doesn't understand him; why is he walking so fast, she finds it hard to chase after him, only able to inhale and exhale while asking in the middle of running.

Who can expect that suddenly Ye Che stops, making her collide once again, this time into his wide and hard back.

"Ah!" Long Mo Er steps back, she used her hand to stroke her nose that bumped into him.

What is going on today? Why does she keep getting hurt? Why is she so unlucky? Today isn't a good day to go out, is it?

Ah~~~~~

"How many times should I tell you, so you will be more cautious:be more careful?"

Ye Che looks at Long Mo Er after she bumped into him, one of his hands holds her chin while the other hand gently strokes her nose, only to ensure that she is

fine.

Spitting his anger, Long Mo Er stays still, standing there without any movement.

Feeling the warmth of Ye Che's big palm touching her face, suddenly the warmth spreads into her small face.

For once again the distance between Long Mo Er and Ye Che are closer and intimate, which resulting her heart crazily beats. His face is so clear, his V shape chin and tired face so obvious because he is exhausted recently. But his speaking tone is still so fierce, making people who heard it feel a bit afraid, still, there is a slightly warm feeling in his eyes: is she mistaken?

Lu Qun finally catches up with them seeing this kind of intimate scenery, her face turned red beet.

“Miss, you are so audacious with Third Young Master, doing this kind of thing in this bustling street. It seems it's only me who is worrying for nothing, Miss and Third Young Master having this kind of intimacy-lovely dovey look, would make others die because of envy, how could I have felt that Miss was unhappy these days? And how could I have felt that Third Young Master dislikes Miss? I am so stupid! Now looking at both of them who are lovely dovey, Little Miss replacing big Miss to marry into this family might be the right decision.” Lu Qun spoke softly to herself.

“Hei, isn't this Third Young Master?”

A man cuts off these three people, a voice similar to cold water being poured into Ye Che's head.

Ye Che immediately checks what he has done, hurriedly releases his hand, and then the slight warmth disappeared.

18

Annoying character finally showed up.

Ye Che emotions stirring, Long Mo Er, this naive girl doesn't know what kind of problem she might get in by knowing Zhang Nian Liang.

This chapter is good progress to Ye Che and Long Mo Er feeling for each other. He pissed off and irritated with every detail of her movement while she dying to know more about him.

Chapter 18

Visiting The Store for First Time (3)

“Third Young Master?” the man thought that Ye Che didn’t hear him calling, and he called him once more...

Ye Che expressionlessly looked at the man: “Zhang Gong Zi is there anything I can help you with?”

“As I said how could I not see Third Young Master in Bai Hua Lane for a couple of days, it seems that Third Young Master is meeting with this cute young lady, this kind of pure and innocent lady indeed has a different “taste” compared to an elegant Fei Yan! No wonder these days Fei Yan is always alone! Ha ha...”

In the beginning, Young Master Zhang might feel a little bit scared with Ye Che’s sarcastic cold temperament and attitude, while Ye Che really doesn’t think much about this “attitude” towards Young Master Zhang, so that as time passes by, Young Master Zhang gets used to facing Ye Che and foolishly thought that Ye Che won’t do anything to him.

However for the bandits who are beside him, looking at Ye Che’s murderous sight, they step back, feeling the cold air blowing on their necks. Everyone knows that the Third Young Master of Ye’s family is someone who they could not afford to be offended!

“Ye Che, is she your friend?” Long Mo Er excitedly asked. This is the first time for Long Mo Er to meet someone other than the Ye’s family members who can be called his “Friend”.

About Long Mo Er’s stupid question, Ye Che doesn’t really care.

While Lu Qun, who stands beside Long Mo Er, feels her head is starting to ache.

Heaven! Miss, couldn’t you see Third Young Master’s expression of dislike? And that stupid man who stands in front of them is really an idiot who dares to burst that kind of words, how could you have identified him as Third Young

Master's friend? Would a friend speak like that to his friend? OMG! MY GOD, When will YOU make my Miss smarter only for a little bit, making her comparable with Big Miss, who could read other people's facial expression? Lu Qun murmured softly.

“Kawaii young lady, I am Zhang Nian Liang, Third Young Master and I have a kind of good relationship! We often meet at Bai Hua Lane.” After hearing Long Mo Er's question, Zhang Nian Liang happily introduces himself to Long Mo Er, and even said that both he and Third Young Master love to visit Bai Hua Lane.

It is not like he is so brave, daring to speak in front of Long Mo Er about Ye Che who likes to visit Bai Hua Lane, but because he doesn't know that the young lady standing in front of him is the wife that Ye Che married and brought into the Ye's family. He even thought that Ye Che might have a new confidante. After all, everyone knows that Third Young Master unwillingly married, even at his own wedding night he abandoned his wife and chose to spend the night with Bai Hua Lane's Fei Yan, and the person who had been married into the family had been put into the “Cold Palace”.

“Zhang Gong Zi, did you say Bai Hua Lane?” Bai Hua Lane, that place reminds her of Fei Yan. Everyone knows Fei Yan; it was in her first time meeting with Ye Che that the beautiful lady stood beside him. So Fei Yan is really famous. This is not her first time she heard about Fei Yan together with Ye Che's name, but weirdly her heart now feels uncomfortable.

Long Wan Er, you this woman! Don't you see and sense that I'm pissed off? Moreover you are speaking with another man about a brothel house in this bustling street, even speaking with such a happy mood, is this something a young lady should be doing? Your Long's family is well known as an educated family, how can you not know the basic teachings? Ye Che walks away; he doesn't think to stay there.

“Bai Hua Lane, do you know?”

“know!....”

.....

“Miss, Third Young Master has walked far away!” Lu Qun knew that Third Young Master was angry, but she is really helpless in dealing with her Miss.

Not caring whether both of them are speaking or not, Lu Qun pulls Long Mo Er's hand and makes a big step to chase Ye Che.

"Miss, you haven't told me what your name is!" Zhang Nian Liang asked Long Mo Er who has walked away.

"Wei, why are you walking so fast?" Long Mo Er caught up with Ye Che, one step walking while the other step running to follow Ye Che.

"I only want to speak with your friend for a little longer to understand you more, you didn't say anything and just walked away, you are so impolite this way!" she naturally complained.

Ye Che's body stiffened, he doesn't know what kind of things violently strike into his chest.

His face and his eyes glare at the face of the person, who is complaining. Small beads of sweat, because of running to follow him, marks her face, the breathless and pale lips who finds it hard to inhale and exhale the air, and the warm breath that spreads into his shoulder.

Without realizing it, he slowed down his steps.



Chapter 19

Visiting The Store for First Time (4)

“Where are we heading now?”

Without she realized she has already walking side by side with Ye Che, Long Mo Er looked around at the four corners of the business place.

Ye Che doesn't reply but his facial expression is bit relax.

After Lu Qun observed Ye Che's, only for her Miss gratified. Third Young Master isn't someone hard-hearted person, towards small detail, Third Young Master really gentle dealing with her Little Miss.

“Woah! Tang Hu Lu (sugar coated fruit with stick)!” Long Mo Er suddenly shouted due to excitement.

Not far from their side, there is a little boy who wears ragged garments, shouting selling. That bright red of Tang Hu Lu color is similar with the illuminating sun shine, bright and shiny.

Long time ago when first time she ate Tang Hu Lu, the sour and sweet taste are still stayed at her memory, Long Mo Er can't control herself as if she wants to follow that little boy.

"Miss" Lu Qun cannot help opened her mouth called Long Mo Er.

Why is she forgetting that Third Young Master still standing here? Based on big Miss Character, she won't and shouldn't be alike this. This isn't something well educated-family Missy will do. Just now, the conversation between Miss and Zhang Nian Liang was out of the limit, if this continue, it hard to protect from Third Young Master about Miss real identity.

"what?" Long Mo Er turned her head, her eyes seems dazed.

"Let her go!" Ye Che knew that Lu Qun is smarter compare to her Zhu Zi (master), she understands his displeased expression, his soft voice stopped Lu Qun.

Lu Qun looked at Ye Che eyes, she shook her head to Long Mo Er said: "no, nothing."

Long Mo Er happily takes two sticks from the little boy, while Lu Qun helped her to pay.

She can't resist the tempt of the Tang Hu Lu, Long Mo Er bite it little bit. Sticky, sweet and sour taste filled her mouth.

"he he, it really delicious!" she exposed her idiot smile to Ye Che.

A small Tang Hu Lu, weirdly makes her to expose sincere smile, does that Tang Hu Lu really that delicious? Ye Che little doubt about it. This kind of smile which he seen right now in front of his eyes, creating such hesitation about Tang Hu Lu attraction.

"do you want to taste?" Long Mo Er gave another stick to him.

Letting a man to eat this kind of thing which only children would eat, only her who could think such way, Ye Che throws disgusting looked to the Tang Hu Lu,

even more disgusting to Long Mo Er.

“If you don’t want to eat, just say it, said a sentence won’t kill you. Come, Lu Qun, this one for you.” Long Mo Er gave a stick of Tang Hu Lu to front of Lu Qun.

“Miss, don’t forget that you are Long Wan Er.” Lu Qun said when she saw Ye Che has walked far away, if she doesn’t remind her Miss, her identity will be exposed, and that day might come little bit closer.

“Ah!” after being reminding by Lu Qun, finally Long Mo Er realized what she has been acting wrong, hurried using her hand to close her mouth. Her attitude doesn’t look alike her big sister, pissed off with herself : “what should I do? What should I do? Lu Qun?”

She feels uneasy.

“Hurried up, walking! Third Young Master perhaps hasn’t find out, Miss, starting from now you should pay attention to your act.”

Long Mo Er nodding her head, Looking at Tang Hu Lu in her hands, she doubting whether to eat or not.

She looking at Ye Che’s back.

“Faster, Miss, move!”

Chapter 20

Visiting The Store for First Time (Last Part)

At one of the red wood crafting flower front door of store, Ye Che stopped, without careful he looked at the back of Long Mo Er who fasten her steps to follow his back, then he entered the store.

“Lu Qun, did Ye Che enter this shop?” Long Mo Er saw Ye Che entered the shop, but she saw nothing in the front door of the store after looking at the right and left, did she mistaken seeing him?

“Miss, I did see Third Young Master entering this store, nothing wrong!” Lu Qun very sure that she saw Ye Che entered.

“why I couldn’t see him?”

“Let’s we enter the store and asked!” Lu Qun suggested.

“Wait!” suddenly Long Mo Er stopped her.

She doesn’t understand, looking at Long Mo Er, who is walking to one corner of bustling street, get closer to someone. The Tang Hu Lu which holding by her hand finally given to the children who begging in the street, those children are exposing their happiness by laughing.

Lu Qun realizing that her Miss really someone kind-hearted, her kindness really hard to describe by her.

Since she was ten years old, she was brought by Lao Ye and Fu Ren, first time she saw her little Miss smile was when they were hand shaking as friend. That time she was felt having place to be called as home for her first in her life time, having family. She grows up together with big Miss and little Miss.

This scenery just similar as the first time she met her little Miss.

“Lu Qun, let’s we enter!” Long Mo Er has already standing beside Lu Qun.

Both of them are entering the store.

“This young lady, this is your first time come! Come and take a look, in here we have many accessories, pick what you like.” A middle aged woman said when she looked they entered, quickly walked in front of them, passionately called them.

Long Mo Er is thinking to ask her whether she sees Ye Che or not, but she doesn't have any chance, she pulled Long Mo Er to one of the cabinet, bring out one of beautiful accessories from the cabinet and said: “Lady, see whether this one it suit you or not!”

Long Mo Er looked at the chain bracelet on her palm, that chain bracelet has one rounded big black pearl as the ornament, that black color really unique and alluring moreover the glossy makes Long Mo Er hard to close her eyes from it. Her fingertip touched the pearl, sleek smooth and meticulous, it hard for Long Mo Er to put it back.

“Young lady, this pearl is come from Nan Yang, it is rare thing. This is the only one within the entire capital city. The appearance, the tactile impression, the glossy is better than others pearls that available!” she looked that Long Mo Er seems to like the chain bracelet, non-stop recommending it.

Even she never seen this young lady, doesn't know her background, but seeing she wearing silk cloth, all over her body is radiating kind of aura, which people could guess she might one of the rich missy, if this business really success, this might one of the big selling ever be made! That middle aged woman thought.

“What are you discussing?” Ye Che impatience waiting for Long Mo Er, thinking that she couldn't find him, he walking out from the inside hall but what he saw was this scene.

“Third Young Master, this little young lady seems to like the Nan Yang's pearl chain bracelet!” The middle aged woman reported to Ye Che, ensuring that Long Mo Er is her customer.

“Ye Che.” After Long Mo Er saw Ye Che, she so happy and said: “ see, as I said I was so clearly seeing you entered this place, no way you disappeared, so you was inside.”

“Do Third Young Master and this young lady know each other?” the middle age

woman is so clear heard that the young lady called her Third Young Master by his name, others than the Ye's family members who could call Third Young Master name as Ye Che directly, no one dare to call his name but only address him as Third Young Master, even one of the closest Fei Yan can't directly called his name but address him Third Young Master, hence this young lady just naturally opened her mouth and called him by his name, what is the relationship between this young lady and Third Young Master? What is her status?

"Ng." Ye Che didn't explain.

Long Mo Er listened to Ye Che cold answered, she is disappointed. Why he didn't tell people about their relationship? Does the answer about their relationship really hard to tell?

It right, he is unwillingly married her, so how could she asked him to explain their relationship to others? Moreover their relationship is fake, doesn't she decide to match maker Ye Che with Fei Yan? Doesn't she at the last still leaving? They are nothing!

But with this kind of thought, why she still feel so sad?

"How long you will lose your thought? Doesn't you come here today with me in order to help me for settling the business matter? What is your opinion after strolling and walking to two stores?" Ye Che asked.

"Ah?" she never thought Ye Che would ask her, she was being distracting. It right, didn't she come out today for helping Ye's family to solve their business problems? What was she doing?

"Fine, now we should get back to residence." Ye Che never counting her, one little girl to help him in anything, her blank facial expression was explained very clear, a moment ago this store account has been counted while waiting for her so today all is settle and they could get back to residence.

"Are we leaving? But I just arrived!" Long Mo Er showed disbelieving by looked at him

"Move." Ye Che spoke once more time then he leaving.

Long Mo Er reluctant, looking at the black pearl chain bracelet on her hand, gently put it down and following him, walked out.

The middle age woman is secretly observing, after Long Mo Er leaving, finally she could make a guess of her.

21

Just letting you know that silent separation AKA you are my sunshine is currently airing and you can watch it via youtube (if you understand Chinese) in Croton Media channel or you may check the review and recap in Hui3r.wordpress

Again, for the second time Long Mo Er is secretly going out from the Ye's residence. Not for playing but for doing foolish things which once again makes her get in trouble...

Chapter 21

Master and servant are having stage dialogue

With the sunshine illuminating the room, everything is so quiet, happy and auspicious.

Suddenly all the peacefulness just vanished with someone's voice.

"Aiya! It's completely over, it's done, all of it is completely done!"

Long Mo Er can't sit or stand calmly; she grabbed and pulled her hair.

"Miss, don't be like this! Anyway what is done is already done, the things that shouldn't have been done has also been done. It has passed for a day, it is useless to regret now." Lu Qun coldly said.

It's not that her attitude is usually cold, but her Miss has been like this after they got back. At the beginning she was still able to comfort her, but as time passed by, her Miss started to walk to and fro, stand and sit, making her head spin. Today she is starting all over again.

"But, but it was me who said I would help him, last night when we had dinner, I could sense that all the family members were unhappy because of the business matters. It has been sometime that Ye Lao Ye and Ye Fu Ren aren't smiling. Actually I could have helped, but I wasted the opportunity and didn't do anything, stupidly spent a day's time. Now even though they aren't laughing at me, I should feel happy already. That's right, there is still Ye Che, that day his last expression said he didn't believe on me helping him at all!" said Long Mo Er.

"Miss, all of the Ye's family members know that you have thought about their matter, they are also content, and that should be enough. What we should do now is pay more attention to your identity." Lu Qun hopes Long Mo Er understands the real problem.

To be very scared and on the edge of fear every day because of worrying for her little Miss' identity being discovered, she is always shocked by her little Miss'

activity.

Listening to Lu Qun talk about her identity, Long Mo Er feels a bit embarrassed. When she was in the bustling street, she forgot that she is Long Wan Er, ruining her big sister's perfect image because of her careless attitude. Fortunately Ye Che didn't find out anything, since he said nothing. Or else she might be filled of loopholes.

"I am so sorry, I will pay more attention, won't be so careless anymore. I am Long Wan Er, someone gentle who possess an elegant aura in other's eyes." Long Mo Er gathers her determination.

"But, Lu Qun, but now I am also one of the Ye's family member, I should do my part to make them happy. This way, I could show them the considerate Long Wan Er!" Long Mo Er is still unwilling to give up.

"Yes, Miss, I understand, I understand everything. You are a kind hearted person, you are caring and considerate of all people surrounding you and want all of them happy. But the matter of Ye's family business, Big Young Master, Third Young Master, Fourth Young Master, all of them could solve it, some problems can be solved only by time. Or else, Ye's family business won't expand as it is today." Dealing with her stubborn little Miss, she is so speechless.

"I believe they have that ability but still, I really want to help and share the burden; I don't want to be looked down by Ye Che!" Long Mo Er shows her pitiful expression, looking at Lu Qun. She is reminded of Ye Che's disbelieving expression.

"Miss." Lu Qun is speechless and helpless.

The wind is blowing inside the room through the window, bringing in the scent of flowers. Long Mo Er feels somewhat like being in the wavering wind.

The sky is pale blue, not the slightly white color.

Two people's small shadows leave the court yard when no one is paying attention; they are leaving the Ye's residence secretly.

22

Actually I am thinking to summarize the chapters since I feel some of the chapters really boring. I know you guys are waiting for the OTP. But, during the process, I think, We need to endure little bit since the interesting part will appear soon. heheheehhee

This part, kind of shorter because it talking about Long Mo Er who is thinking to help Ye's family business by observing Zhang Ji, the competitor of Ye's business in clothing.

Chapter 22

Personally Observing The Competitor (Part 1)

In bustling big street, crowded with people, the horse carriages.

Zhang Ji, a store name is displaying silk and satins outside, while two young ladies are standing not far, observing the people who get in and out from there.

“Why there is nothing happen?” Long Mo Er spoke softly to herself.

They are standing here, only to see what kind of trick Zhang Ji used to attract the customer so that they have lots of business, what kind of secret they have?

But half day already passed, all the customer are so normal get in and get out. The boss of the silk and satins and the others shop assistant all of them are doing the business so normal, there even no slightly suspicious situation. There is nothing “abnormal” they can find out. All of them are so normal in doing their thing.

“Move, Lu Qun we get inside!”

Long Mo Er said to Lu Qun, but she still focus and pay attention to the silk and satins store inside, the movement. She doesn't want to lose any small detail of their movement.

“Really need to get inside? Is this alright?” Lu Qun hesitated.

“How do you catch the tiger cub without entering tiger's lair (nothing ventured, nothing gained)? We are here, entering the store won't affect anything.”

“Miss, you are Ye's family member now, entering Zhang Ji, there will be gossip by people.” Lu Qun is trying to protect the last principle of her, still struggling to ensure her Miss.

“Even walking inside the Ye's store, no one could recognize me, moreover the outsider? How could they know me?” not caring too much, she can't get out without gain anything.

On the way coming here, she has thought. Ye's business always better compare to Zhang Ji. Suddenly occurring some big changes, it really weird. It must be something or reason behind it, if they are not doing some movement at back, it means they might have a way to be success!

Doesn't care what method they used, she, Long Mo Er wants to make used her own method to scout out. Every time she always looks bad in front the Ye's family, but above all of it, she will give them the result, so they will increase their respect to her, she should find out the root of the problems.

"But, Miss."

"Stopped it, don't be overly sensitive."

Long Mo Er pulling Lu Qun, entering the silk and satins store.

"Young Lady, what kind of cloth you are looking for?" the silk and satin store boss asking since he has seen both of the lady have been standing outside the store for long time, he sees their appearance that not similar to bad persons. Seeing them as secretive people, they not really one of kind since both of the ladies are entering so opened and honorable which hard for him to describe. Finally both of them walking in, he wants to see what the young ladies want to do.

"I... We are randomly looking." Long Mo Er under the vision of the Boss, cannot naturally answered, even her face is putting smile that she forces.

"Well, Ladies you may randomly takes look, if you need help, called me it will be fine." The boss generous said, he wants to know what they are planning, still he can't beat the grass scared the snake (inadvertently alert an enemy).

"Oh, fine, thank you boss!" Long Mo Er nodding her head.

After the boss passing them, he is talking with others customers.



Chapter 23

Personally Observing The Competitor (Part 2)

Long Mo Er starts to examine the bulk of silks and satins.

She has never been in a silk and satin store. The clothes she wore, all of the fabric cloths were ordered by her father. She doesn't even know the difference between silk and satin since she never paid attention to such things. Finally today she has an opportunity to see silk and satin.

Long Mo Er's eyes are rolling and seeing surrounded, not missing any corner.

Actually this silk and satin compared with the other clothes are not much different. More or less it is the same; the rack on the wall displays various kinds with different colors and different pieces of clothes. Inside the rack there are lots of clothes with many different quantities.

Perhaps it is about distance, the customer can walk to the front of the rack, choosing the most suitable clothes that they like. She makes the comparison for herself; it looks like the silk and satin business is really not bad.

Long Mo Er walks toward the side with less people, with her fingertip touching the fabric clothes. She randomly flips, just wanting to know what is special about Zhang Ji's clothes. But there isn't anything that she feels satisfied with, all are just so ordinary.

Once they put the pink clothes with fragile flower material hanging on the wall that can be seen. Her eyes brightened up.

She moves in front, happily pulling down the material, touching the slip smooth material. "Lu Qun, is this cloth material suitable for Ruo Xuan Mei Mei? The first time I saw it, I feel it is really suitable with Ruo Xuan Mei Mei."

Lu Qun just wanted to ask her, whether her Miss intended to buy the cloth material for Fifth Miss, but a voice made her turn.

"Boss, I want this piece of cloth." That voice's master used her fingertip to point out, then pulling one corner of that pink fragile flower material, said to the

boss.

“Cai Fu Ren (Madam Cai), you have good eyes, I could see that if you wear this cloth, you will be so beautiful.” Behind her, two people who seem to be the same age as that woman jostle in.

Hearing how she is being praised as beautiful, Cai Fu Ren is really happy; her smile is like a blooming flower on her face, very spirited, very cocky.

“Cai Fu Ren, is this the one? It’s the only one left; I am going to wrap it. You have really good eyes.” The boss quickly walks closer.

“Boss, Madam, this cloth material is mine, I’m the first person who saw it.” Being ignored Long Mo Er opened her mouth without any expression, it was she who saw the material first, this Madam is the person who squeezed and jostled in without saying words, a person that doesn’t have manner on the principle of first come first serve, just jostling in and saying she wants to buy it, how could she be like this? This is for Ruo Xuan Mei Mei.

“So what if you are the first person who saw it? You didn’t say you want to buy it? Cai Fu Ren didn’t say anything but the boss was the person who opened his mouth. At the beginning, he could sense these young ladies are so strange, and now they even dare to offend Cai Fu Ren. Cai Fu Ren is one of the legitimate concubines of the high rank officer*; he doesn’t want to get involved with these two young ladies.

Cai Fu Ren seeing the boss help speaking, she is so happy, she as someone who is the legitimate concubine of the high rank officer, who won’t make great effort in front her? These two young ladies, who do they think they are; she likes the cloth who would dare to snatch?

“You, this person, how could you be like this? It is so obvious that My Miss is the first one who saw it. Don’t think just because you are older means you can argue without being reasonable.” Initially Lu Qun was against her Miss purchasing the material, but things have changed, how can she not help her Miss?

“What? Damn maid, you said that I am old, are you tired of living? You should know who I am, this kind of maid dare to speak with me using this kind of attitude, toward me, tell me what household are you from? Simply say I am

impatient.” At that moment the woman’s face became ugly because of angry.

“Cai Fu Ren, don’t get angry because of these two ladies who do not know how high the sky and how thick the land, they are beneath your dignity” said the woman who is standing and trying to win her favor, while the other woman said to Long Mo Er: “Cai Fu Ren is the legitimate concubine of a high ranked officer, you guys should apologize to her.”

“I don’t care who you are? Even if the Emperor is here, he should speak something reasonable!” Lu Qun seeing them with a hateful face panted with rage and replied.

Seeing her Miss is a kind and nice person, easy to bully, even being pressed with their status. But she, Lu Qun isn’t someone that is easy to be bullied; she can’t let her Miss be bullied.

“You, you damn maid!” Cai Fu Ren is pissed off; even the people who are just standing by, heard the noise and admired Lu Qun bravely.

Everyone knows that offending Cai Fu Ren, she will always use her status as the legal concubine of high rank officer to press people? So, there is no one who dares to offend her since everyone knows offending her, they will create disaster for themselves; it has been a while since someone dare offended her. When meeting her, most of them would avoid her.

So, all these people are waiting for the continuation. But Long Mo Er who is standing beside suddenly said: “Fu Ren, sorry, it is our fault! I can’t teach her well – here I am apologizing to you. This cloth is yours.”

Once these words are spoken, everyone just became dumbfounded.

Only, Cai Fu Ren laughed: “You are count as smart!” she knew that everyone who understood, offending her won’t do any good for them.

“Lu Qun, let’s go.” After Long Mo Er said that, she walked out the front.

Based on Miss’ nature and her character she won’t let this thing pass by like this, why? Even Lu Qun didn’t understand, but still she followed her out.

Everyone thought that finally there is a person who dares to fight and offend Cai Fu Ren, but seeing the result, all of them are so disappointed.

- Shang Shu : High Rank Official at same level with government minister

Chapter 24 Tea House, Shedding Tears

Long Mo Er hurriedly left the silk and satin store; on the bottom of her heart she is really thankful to Cai Fu Ren.

If not for Cai Fu Ren's words, what else would remind her that she was Long Wan Er, the Third Young Madam of Ye's family; furthermore, she was standing at Ye's family competitor. If not, earlier she might have talked with that woman, who cares about her status.

But since she is secretly going out, she can't make the matter bigger, quarrelling till bubbling and gurgling; or it's completely over. Moreover that is Zhang Ji, if there is someone who recognized her as Ye's family member, she is afraid what kind of gossip would spread.

This time her response is quicker than Lu Qun. Looking at Lu Qun's face, Long Mo Er is happier.

But the GOD didn't allow her to be!

The man standing in front of her escalated walking closer to her, his face is excited.

"Lady, do you remember me? I am Zhang Nian Liang. We meet again." First words were said by Zhang Nian Liang after seeing Long Mo Er, who just realized something different with Long Mo Er. That time she was hurryingly leaving him, she didn't even give her name, hard to find ah~

Today his luck is so good, finally meeting her. No wonder this morning when he woke up, he heard the magpie's chirps.

"Were you the person who talked with Ye Che?" Long Mo Er tried to remember Zhang Nian Liang inside her memories.

"You still remember me, it's too good." Being remembered by this cute young lady, I feel so good; doesn't this mean that this young lady has feelings toward him too?

Lu Qun gives Zhang Nian Liang a glare full of hatred. She doesn't understand why upon meeting this man her entire body feels uncomfortable, something's wrong, whatever it is, she hates him. Last time Third Young Master was also too lazy to deal with him, that is to say, this man is not a good man; she really needs to take her Miss away.

"Miss, the time is getting late, we should go back." She didn't make any opportunity for him to bring her Miss.

"Young lady, are you busy? Why are you in such a hurry?" Zhang Nian Liang after listening to Lu Qun's words, hurriedly asked Long Mo Er.

Long Mo Er thought that Lu Qun was still pissed off because of the incident in the silk and satins store, she even smiled to her.

"Nothing!" she met this man again, whether to prove that she has a chance to know more about YeChe from this man or not? Why doesn't she grasp this opportunity? When she thought she can know more about Ye Che, she is so excited!

"So, young lady, I will treat you to tea, won't you?" Zhang Nian Liang wanted to spend more time with Long Mo Er, hoping he could make her stay with him.

"Fine!" Long Mo Er agreed so fast. She is really fine with drinking tea and talking about Ye Che. Drinking a cup of tea, she might know more about Ye Che, really too good.

"Miss, why do you give that bastard an opportunity?" Lu Qun pulled Long Mo Er, whispering to her.

"Zhang Gong Zi isn't a bastard; he is Ye Che's friend!" Long Mo Er softly answered.

Why does Lu Qun hate Zhang Gong Zi?

"Young Lady, this side, please." Zhang Nian Liang knew that Lu Qun had a purpose toward him. Afraid that he might say something bad to Long Mo Er, letting her change her mind, that's why she cut all his words.

"Ng." Long Mo Er followed him.

Lu Qun helplessly followed them. Only her Miss would think this Zhang Nian

Liang is a good person, she only hoped nothing bad will happen. “My Lord GOD, You should protect us!”

“Zhang Gong Zi, are you close with Ye Che?” Long Mo Er put down her cup and asked. Her naïve eyes sparkling as it looked at Zhang Nian Liang who is in front of her, expecting his answer.

“With the Third Young Master of Ye’s family?” even though he didn’t understand Long Mo Er’s intention, but seeing Long Mo Er’s eyes, he is overwhelmed, he thought that Long Mo Er has a good impression on him, then he started: “of course we are close, we often meet.” It is true that he met him, but only in passing by; that time he took initiative to call Ye Che.

“Oh ya? So you must know Ye Che well?” it looked as if they were so close and familiar, Long Mo Er even thought that both of them are really good friends, believing him so much.

Lu Qun stood up at behind her, really can’t restraint herself and said: “it’s finished, Miss, you are helpless.”

“I really know him well; he is very well-known in this central city, all of the people are afraid of him. But I don’t get scared of him, I’m also very famous in this central city, just mention my name, no one in this city doesn’t know me.” Zhang Nian Liang boasted about himself.

“All people are afraid of him?” Long Mo Er said with a twinkling in her eyes.

Every time she meets Ye Che, she is flustered, panicking and even sweating cold sweat. Is it because she is afraid of him? Does everyone also experience the same thing as her? Yes, “afraid”, it is?

“He’s always showing that expression, and also dislikes to smile, as if everyone is in debt with him, thinking he acted cool, of course everyone is afraid of him. Every time I meet him, I feel like smashing him.” After he spoke, he looked around, scared about being found out by Ye Che. He doesn’t want to bear the responsibility. His words only showed for the beauty who sits in front of him, blushing smile, to boast himself.

Actually, he doesn’t have guts toward Ye Che!

“Ah?” Is it really?” how could it be like this, the answer that she expected is far

different.

“Oh ya, only when he is with Bai Hua Lane’s Fei Yan, he will act differently.” Zhang Nian Liang remembered Ye Che’s other confidante, without adding anything, he said it.

“Fei Yan?” Long Mo Er’s heart ached. The tea cup on her hand fell down.

It seems Ye Che really likes that Fei Yan, only Fei Yan is someone special inside his heart.

Why does she feel that her face is damp? The front scene becomes blur all of a sudden?

Chapter 25 Family's Helped

“Young lady? Why are you crying? Did I say something wrong?”

Because of Zhang Nian Liang, Long Mo Er realized she was crying.

Why is she crying?”

“Miss? Do you feel uncomfortable?” Lu Qun was worried and asked herself, wasn't she just fine a moment ago?

“Lu Qun, I want to go home” said Long Mo Er, standing while crying.

“Fine, fine, Miss don't cry, let's go home.” Lu Qun thought Long Mo Er might be sick, and hurriedly comforted her; she hopes her Miss will stop crying and restrain herself a little bit.

Seeing the two people in front of him prepare to leave, Zhang Nian Liang panicked.

He stands up, his big step strides in front of Long Mo Er, holding Long Mo Er's hand: “How could you leave in such a way? I have been waiting for you.”

“Let me go! I want to go home.”

Long Mo Er puts all her effort in tossing his hand away, which is holding hers.

“Beauty, I won't easily let you go.” Only by those words Zhang Nian Liang was exposing the truth about his real intentions.

“My Miss is asking you to let her go.” Lu Qun shouted, holding Long Mo Er's hand to help her.

In the beginning she already knew this Zhang Nian Liang isn't a good man, but her Miss is so naïve and stubborn in believing him, now her Miss knows what kind of person he is!

Zhang Nian Liang panicked, which caused him to put down his hand.

The meat that he has in front of him, he won't let it go that easily, giving her a

good “face” she think he is an easy person, she wants to come then come, wants to go then go, who does she think Zhang Nian Liang is? She doesn’t even give him any benefit.

“Faster, capture them” said Zhang Nian Liang.

“Stop, let her go.” The cold and loud voice makes everyone feel stuffed; the person who captured Long Mo Er’s hand was shocked and released her, giving Long Mo Er and Lu Qun the opportunity to escape.

When both of them turned their heads, they knew who saved them.

In this moment they are dumbfounded.

Two good looking men, expressionlessly look at her, even though they are expressionless, but both Long Mo Er and Lu Qun could sense their cold and terrifying radiance. Long Mo Er lowered her head, not daring to look at them.

Before they were so gentle and warm when they interacted with her. Now, she doesn’t know how to face them, it’s better for her to step back, walking to their side.

Zhang Nian Liang saw Long Mo Er walking away because of that foolish person who let her go. His hand prepared to capture Long Mo Er’s hand, at the time he wanted to grab her hand, but a low and deep strong voice said: “You dare to touch her, be careful with your hand.” Zhang Nian Liang hands numbed.

Long Mo Er raised her head, seeing nothing, she kept on walking to the front.

“Wei, Big Ye’s Young Master, Ye’s Fourth Young Master, what are you doing? You guys don’t interrupt my business.”

Zhang Nian Liang shrunk under Ye Yan’s glaring look, fidgety, asked, his eyes wide open seeing the beauty walking toward them.

“Big brother, Fourth brother” Long Mo Er cautiously and solemnly looked at them.

“Big Young Master, Fourth Young Master.” Lu Qun’s voice is trembling; now in front of her eyes were the big Young Master and Fourth Young Master who looked so scary!

“Big brother?Fourth brother?” Zhang Nian Liang pondered: “I never knew that

Ye's family has two daughters!"

"You don't know her status, and think to cause trouble for her? Damn you (taboo cursing), you really don't want to live anymore." Finally Ye Ding unable to withstand, panted with rage, walked to the front and pulled Zhang Nian Liang's robe, lifting his body up.

Actually his first intention in going out with his big brother was to talk about business. When entering the Tea House, they saw a group of men making a movement to two weak young ladies; moreover one of the ladies was crying; furthermore that young lady is someone they know, his third sister in law. His breath became unstable immediately and hurriedly came to approach. He really wanted to crash, smash, and mush those bastards into two pieces.

Long Mo Er ran to approach Ye Ding's side, came beside him, her pair of hands lifted, and murmured: "No... don't! I... I'm sorry! I... He's... not... doing anything ...me. I... I want to go home." She can't make Ye Ding hit others because of her, now she really wants to go home.

Long Mo Er's tears whirling, letting Ye Ding put his hand down, releasing Zhang Nian Liang's robe.

"Third sister in law." He really doesn't understand; then his dissatisfaction just changed to a deep sigh.

"Ding, bring Wan Er to our residence." Looking at Long Mo Er's condition, Ye Yan thought the best thing is sending her home first.

"Third sister in law, we'll go home." Said Ye Ding.

"So that beauty is Ye's Third Young Master's wife?" people are gossiping when all the Ye's left the place, while Zhang Nian Liang looked shocked when he heard this news.

At the main door of the Ye residence, the horse carriage stopped.

All the people inside the horse carriage got off; together they entered the main door.

"Lu Qun, you take Wan Er to have a rest." Ye Yan said: "and, all the things that happened today, all should be kept as a secret." He doesn't want his father and

mother to worry, and of course Ye Che. Still not knowing how Ye Che's and Long Mo Er's relationship develop to what "stage", if this matter really affected their relationship, it won't be good.

"Big Brother..." Ye Ding still wanted to ask his Third sister in law what actually happened, why she appeared in the Tea House, and how she could be together with that shameless bastard. He wants to know all these things.

Ye Yan stopped him: "I know what you want to say, follow me to the study room."

hug

Chapter 26 Ye Che Pissed Off

In front of the red door, Long Mo Er paused.

“Lu Qun, you may take your leave, I want to be alone.”

“Fine, Miss, if you need something just call me.”

“Ng” Long Mo Er entered the room and closed the door.

Zhang Nian Liang’s words are still in his mind.

“Only with Bai Hua Lane’s Fei Yan will he show a different expression.”

.....

Why does her heart in so much hurt and pain? With the pain as if she couldn’t breathe? She can’t control her emotions and her tears started to drop. How could it be like this? A long time ago, when she was hurt because of tumbling down, the pain did not hurt like this, she also wouldn’t cry, but now...

She lowered her head, trying to depend on her memory of the room, preparing to walk to her bed.

“Where are you going?”

She doesn’t dare to believe, she heard Ye Che’s voice.

How can he be here? He never came here before! Long Mo Er thought she might be mistaken so she kept on walking forward.

“I am asking you, are you listening?”

Ye Che is pissed off and walked to her side, he grasped Long Mo Er’s pair of

hand, so she is able to face him.

Today he's really confused and weird; he didn't realize it but suddenly he walked over here, entering her room. After he married Long Mo Er, this room was given to Long Mo Er, while he always slept in the guest room or the study room.

Walking till here, everything was so familiar to him, nothing has changed, but because of someone, he felt something is different, many feminine things are inside.

He looked at all the corners of the room, but he couldn't see her, even her shadow. Seeing the empty room, his heart suddenly felt empty and lost. He had been living here for more than twenty years but this is the first time he felt this way.

After that, he ordered people to look for her.

After he was waiting for half a day, he got the answer that Long Mo Er wasn't in the residence; Lu Qun also disappeared with her.

At that moment he was furious.

Why was she secretly going out from the residence again?

Does she never think about her status?

As said she is someone elegant, the well-educated big Miss of the Long's household?

Does she ever think about his feeling?

.....

At that time, Ye Che didn't realize that besides being so angry, he was also worried about her.

His worries are greater than his anger.

Ye Che couldn't sit properly; he kept on sitting down and up, agitatedly waiting for her to get back home.

When he saw the door open, he saw her walking alone inside. He tried to control himself, and asked her with a low voice.

She, she only paused; she seems to be not listening to him at all.

Now she got back, but she does not take notice of him. Her guts seems to be passed the level of his thought, unexpectedly, there is no reason and explanation she gives to him.

His anger bursts out; he walked in front of her, grasping her hand, only to make her face him.

This is one of the beautiful and heart-warming chapter.

A man who has high self pride alike Ye Che finally admitting his feeling. He has fallen for her since first time he saw her.

I like the way Ye Che showing his gentleness and affection toward Long Mo Er.



Chapter 27 Forgetting Anger

Long Mo Er is dragged by the powerful strength. In her fuzzy vision she sees Ye Che's charming face.

"Ye Che? Is that you?" Long Mo Er's hand pain is nothing compared to her disbelief; in front of her is the real Ye Che, not her illusion, he is real.

When Long Mo Er lifted her head, Ye Che obviously could see her teary red eyes; her face is wet with tears. Suddenly, he feels something in his heart is exploding, letting him use his fingers to stroke her face gently.

"What happened?" Ye Che loosened her hands and asked panicking.

Ng!~~~~

He doesn't get the answer with words but he got an answer with a grieved and broken hearted crying voice.

Long Mo Er uses all her strength to hug Ye Che's waist. Her head is in his bosom, tightly hugging him. All her grievance, her pain, her broken-hearted, her anxiety... all just became alike as beads of dropping tears; she burst out in Ye Che's embrace.

Ye Che is shocked and surprised with Long Mo Er, at the moment she touched him, he could only stand stiff, he doesn't even know where to put his hands.

What was happening to her? What matter was she facing?

Did she get bullied by others?

When he thought of all the possibilities, the initial Ye Che that didn't know where to put his hand suddenly put his hand at Long Mo Er's back and held her gently.

Why does her crying voice feel like its breaking his heart extremely? He will go insane.

He doesn't know what karma he has done before, Ye Che was always someone who could be so calm and composed, but now he insanely wants to kill anyone who hurt Long Mo Er.

He really wants to know what has happened to her, but she is hugging him this tightly, making it hard for him to move, he can only let her cry out.

After sometime, slowly Long Mo Er's crying voice becomes soundless.

Her voice becomes weaker and weaker, until suddenly it became quiet, no voice.

Ye Che lowers his head, looking at Long Mo Er who shut her eyes closed. Her face still wet because of her tears.

Long Mo Er fell asleep.

Ye Che gently carried Long Mo Er who slept soundly, walking to the bed. He knows that she is petite but he never knew that she was really light. As if a precious treasure, Ye Che is careful on his every footstep while carrying her.

Gently putting her on the bed and pulling the blanket to cover her. He doesn't even bother with himself, his robe is wet because of Long Mo Er's tears; he walked to the basin which is filled with water, twist the dry towel, and then he went back to the bed's edge.

Using his finger, Ye Che doesn't want to affect Long Mo Er's sleep, as he wipes her tears in her small face very carefully.

"Do you know? After I married you, do you know the things that always come to my mind?" Ye Che wipes her face very gently, he wipes while speaking softly, this is the first time Ye Che showed his warm and gentle face expression. "I am thinking about you."

"Thinking about you, I don't even have the strength to control myself to stop thinking about you. At the beginning, I was afraid that you were someone who is poisonous as the snake and vicious, a lady that is filled with scheme. Afraid you are someone, who because of money, married into my family. Every day I always looked at you, asking people to see and observe every movement of yours."

Ye Che put down the towel.

"During the first meeting, I helped you. Then, I grew curious about you. You are someone who has guts when dealing with others and even fought with those thugs in the bustling street, moreover you are only a girl. At that time, you were

really unique. Just on that way, you have entered into my heart, entering my life.”

“After knowing you are Long Wan Er, I was surprised. Only because you are Long Wan Er, I abided and avoided your presence. On that day, I saw you crying, I was thinking why should I care so much about your tears? Then, after I thought deeply about my feeling toward you, I decided to hide. When I saw your happy expression while eating with all the Ye’s family members, I was doubtful and felt uneasy with myself, because after you saw me, your expression changed and became stiff and nervous. To rethink now, I think during that time I intentionally did it, so only for you to remember me.”

“Then, not long after, in the garden, you said to me, whether we could live peacefully with each other? It was just clear and obvious that I...” Ye Che flashes back to the scenery of them when they were in the garden.

“For days, I really couldn’t understand myself why I acted that way. Moreover, I started to miss you. Seeing your tears, it becomes days of problem for me, finally I came to understand.”

He gently holds Long Mo Er hands, Ye Che puts her hand to his lips: “I will make all people to know what your status, you, Long Wan Er is mine, Ye Che’s wife.”

He stood up and kissed Long Mo Er’s lip.

Ye Che covers the blanket well for her, glancing her for a moment before he goes out.

Now, he should make things clear, what matter makes her cry.

Chapter 28 The conversation in the Study Room

Inside the study room, the atmosphere is so terrifying.

Lu Qun is so nervous standing, her shaking hand grabbing her robe.

Big Young Master's and Fourth Young Master's eyes make her feet feel weak. If her strength does not exist, she might fall to the ground.

After she sent her Miss to her room, she didn't even have a proper chance to breath, someone was asked to call her to meet Big Young Master in the study room.

The chilling atmosphere ruined her composed self that she tried to make before.

Aiya, MY GOD! My life is hard!

What bad thing did she do to GOD?

Why should a gutless (chicken-hearted) person like her face this kind of big matter?

Big Young Master and Fourth Young Master are sweet-tempered people, treating the servants and maids good, but these two people in front of her are so scary, it's a lie if she isn't afraid of them now.

Why did they call her to come here?

Ah! Won't it... won't it... won't they use the house's law¹ to punish her?

She heard that the wealthy people have so many ways to punish their servants according to the house's law...

If that thick and long whip will be whipped onto her body, the long wood will hit her butt, her finger being fried in hot oil, those wounds...

Aiya! Her body might be filled with many wound and pain would be her death.

She doesn't want to think about the punishment!

How could her life be so tragic? If earlier she knew, even if she died she wouldn't let her little Miss go out.

Lu Qun showed a fearful expression, her fear spreading all over her body.

This won't do, she should give a good explanation to clear herself and her Miss, she can't make Big Young Master and The Fourth Young Master misunderstand her Miss.

She doesn't want to be punished, being punished half to death without giving a clear explanation. She doesn't want to lie on bed for the rest of her life.

After a moment.

This is not the Long household; even if her Miss wants to help her out, she doesn't even have that power. She will tell the truth.

Fine! Based on the attitude of Big Young Master and Fourth Young Master, her Miss won't get problems, but who will help her? She needs to protect herself.

"Big Young Master, Fourth Young Master, Lu Qun admits the fault." Lu Qun threw a glance at them, and then she kneeled. "Today Miss went out from the residence, I didn't stop her, it's really my fault."

After secretly glancing at the facial changes of Big Young Master, Lu Qun continue: "Miss went out, not for playing, but she didn't want to see Third Young Master and all the Ye's family members frown everyday because of the business matters, so Miss wanted to visit Zhang Ji to have a look in order to help out this family matter." She tried not to make her voice tremble, forcing herself to say the truth.

After hearing this, Ye Yan and Ye Ding are throwing glances, stuffed for a moment.

"So you said, Third sister-in-law only wanted to make us happy, she thought of helping the business? And she even visited Zhang Ji?" Ye Ding's face filled with surprise.

Lu Qun nodded, she told them all the things from the start in complete detail.

"What? Both of you even met that damn woman, Cai Fu Ren? She even argued with Third sister-in-law?" Ye Ding even shouted after hearing that.

He knows that Cai minister's side concubine, that woman, thought that because she is younger than other concubines of the Cai Minister, she is being loved and spoiled by the Cai minister, if she becomes offended, it might lose one life. Third sister in law is someone elegant and well educated; she really can't win over that woman. If she didn't suffer a loss, it's even weirder.

"No, I was trying to help Miss seek justice, but I was stopped by Miss." Lu Qun hurriedly said.

Ye Yan came to understand; she not only prevented the matter from becoming bigger; she also knew how to behave.

He really admired Long Wan Er's consideration.

Note :

1] 家Jia 规 Gui : family rules, family law, discipline

Chapter 29 Heart Pain

After Ye Che went out of the room, he asked someone where Lu Qun is. He wanted to know the reason behind Long Mo Er's tears.

After he asked, he found out that Lu Qun was called by Ye Yan to the study room.

He is curious why Lu Qun was being called by his Big Brother, but he doesn't have the time to care that much, the only thing he wants to know is what happened to Long Mo Er.

He didn't arrive at the front door of the study room, but he could already hear Ye Ding's screaming voice.

Why was Ding also there? Did both Big Brother and Ding know what's going on?

What is going on?

"Third sister-in-law even had a drink of tea with that bastard Zhang Nian Liang?"

Those words shouted by Ye Ding, every word is heard by Ye Che.

Ye Che's fingers make a fist, wanting to push the door open, but after he didn't hear anymore voices, he really wanted to punch someone after he heard the news.

Did she go out only to have a tea with Zhang Nian Liang? She only met Zhang Nian Liang days ago, are they that close? So how about all the words he said before? Doesn't she know that she is someone's wife? So who is he for her?

His big Brother and others have known earlier what his wife was doing outside while he as her husband was the last person to know.

So the words he had told her, all was to satirize himself, he is really a joke!

His first time to be sincere in admitting his feeling, he even gets this kind of

result.

Hahahaha, how ridicule it is!

His slender finger slowly changed into fist, his palm is covered with fresh red blood. Actually he was in a hurry to find the answer to his heart; after he got the answer, Ye Che turned his body and left.

He doesn't want to hear anything about her.

Bamn!

At that moment, there is the sound of the cup falling.

"Third Young Master, sorry, this lowly one didn't see, Third Young Master" the maid didn't have an opportunity to calm herself, looking at Ye Che's murderous glance, she only kept on apologizing.

The tea water stained Ye Che's body, the initial wet robe becomes worse.

Ye Che as if he heard nothing left with a big step.

After he went out from residence, he thought his mood will get better, but his feeling toward Long Mo Er exceeded than what he thought.

Before he has been hurt with a big wound, but he was never as hurt as he is today, he is at a loss on what to do.

"Ei, isn't he the Third young Master of Ye's family?" a woman whispered to another woman on the street.

"What happened?" the other woman seemed not to understand and asked.

"Haven't you heard? The Third Young Madam of Ye's family and The Young Master Zhang Nian Liang were aggressively pulling each other at Tea House."

"Are you sure?" the other woman seemed not to believe.

"It's true, all the people in Tea house have seen it, that Third Young Madam of Ye's family was leaving with the Big Young Master and The Fourth Young Master of Ye's family.

"I dare not to believe."

"Nothing is impossible in this world. Everything can happen in this world."

“So the Ye’s Third Young Master is really pitiful, marrying that kind of woman into his family, she is really shaming the family!”

“You are right, as they say, Ye’s Third Young Master didn’t intend to marry that woman before.”

.....

Everything they say is heard by Ye Che.

Never thought that smart men like Ye Che, only because of a woman, would become the entire laughing stock of the city.



Chapter 30 Drunk in Bai Hua Lane

Ye Che exposed his bitter smile.

So this is how it feels to have a sincere heart trampled.

He walked aimlessly with no direction; the sky gets darker, similar to Ye Che's feelings.

Ye's residence, because of her, he couldn't stay for a little bit longer, he doesn't know how to face her at this moment, so he could only walk without any sense of direction, keep walking to find himself some peace.

Time has passed for a moment, as Ye Che lifted his head; he discovered that he is standing in front of Bai Hua Lane's main door.

Has it been sometime since he visited this place? Yeah, since the second day he married her?

He's unwilling to think about her, so flinging back his head, he walked inside Bai Hua Lane.

"Ye's Third Young Master, finally you are here, I miss you so much." A soft and flirtatious voice spoke; it is Hua Ma Ma's¹ voice of the Bai Hua Lane who welcomes Ye Che.

Since Fei Yan worked as a courtesan in Bai Hua Lane, Ye Che is a regular in this place. Making her accompany him every time he comes, she get a lot of money from him; he is the real-living God of Wealth², his absence in here for some time made her lose so much money, these days, she is really losing not just a little

money! Her heart feels like it is dripping blood inside!

When Hua Ma Ma gets closer to Ye Che, he could smell the thick and dense scent of her cosmetic through his nose, Ye Che frowned.

How come he never realized that, this kind of smell is so awful?

“Third Young Master, these days are you busy? Not being able to see Third Young Master, every day I can only count day by day and night by night. Please take a look at this face, because of Third Young Master, I lost some kg of weight.” Hua Ma Ma kept on talking about herself, touching her head by her hand, touching for a couple times.

“Where’s Fei Yan?” Ye Che tried to suppress his disgusting feeling, looking at Hua Ma Ma’s disgusting action who did not realize her own age.

“That girl, Fei Yan has been in her own room, these past few days you didn’t come, the person who is most hurt is her. Everyone thought you have forgotten Fei Yan, everyday she looks so gloomy, she is so thin and pale, letting anyone who sees her feel so sad! She might become alright because of your coming, as I predict that girl will be energized a lot after seeing you.”

“I’ll go upstairs to find her.” Ye Che just won’t stay any longer with her; he gives some money to Hua Ma Ma from his robe in front of her, just wanting to dispatch her earlier.

After Hua Ma Ma received the money, she is so happy, her corner of lip lifted and smiled so brightly.

“I will bring you to meet her.”

She turned her body and went upstairs.

“Fei Yan, Third Young Master is coming to see you.”

Hua Ma Ma knocks on the door; Ye Che has been standing in front of the door.

The door is opens quickly; Fei Yan looks so beautiful standing behind the door.

“Ma Ma? Are you saying Third Young Master came?” Fei Yan doubtfully asked.

“Of course la!” Hua Ma Ma throws a glance to signal her to see who is standing near her; Fei Yan looked at her surroundings and sees.

He is Third Young Master, he really is Third Young Master, Third Young Master hasn't forgotten her, Third Young Master is coming to see her. Fei Yan is so excited and happy.

For these past few days, she was so scared because Third Young Master who has been married might forget about her, afraid he won't come to see her anymore. Despite that time when Third Young Master said he didn't want to marry, and also won't marry anyone.

At that night, on his first wedding day, Third Young Master left the new bride alone, she was so happy and on that day she believed herself to be the most special. But on the second day when she met the little girl who talked with Third Young Master, she found a slight change on Third Young Master's eyes, that change just made her feel fearful, scared! Made her not dare to ask too much.

Heaven knows, how she cares, how she really wants to know who that little girl is, but she just didn't have any courage to ask.

Only like that, she missed lot of news about Third Young Master, she could only rely on a little bit of news from the bustling street about him.

She also knows that the relationship between Third Young Master and Third Young Madam is not really good, but only because of this reason does she still worry, she feels as if she has been forgotten by Third Young Master, The Third Young Master has not come to visit her for some time.

She wants to go and see Third Young Master, but no matter how she really likes and loves Third Young Master, forever she is only the third party from others point of view, she is only Blue Mansion's girl³, she doesn't have any right to find Third Young Master.

At this moment, Third Young Master came, who could understand how she feels?

Note :

1] 花 Hua 妈妈 Ma 妈妈 Ma : 花 hua literally means flower but in here it refer to name. 妈妈 ma ma is mother. but in this context Hua Ma Ma (nickname) refer the owner's of brothel (Bai Hua Lane) or could say as someone who "taking care"

all the courtesan who live in one brothel house.

2] 财Cai 神 Shen 爷 Ye : God of Wealth (an idiom) to describe someone who is rich, wealthy and generous.

3] 青 Qing 楼 Lou 女 nv 子 zi : 青楼 qing lou literally mean brothel house while 女子nv zi means girl. in order to fit the line, I translate it as Blue Mansion girl because if the word read as one by one, 青qing is blue, 楼 lou is mansion.

Chapter 31 Drunk in Bai Hua Lane (2)

“Stupid girl, Third Young Master is coming, don’t you feel happy? Why are you stuffed there?” Hua Ma Ma called Fei Yan for her attention.

Trying to suppress her excitement inside her heart, softly Fei Yan said: “Third Young Master, please come inside.”

“Alright. Both of you have a good talk, I still have some business to do. My good girl, you should serve Third Young Master well.” Hua Ma Ma leaves, giving those two people time together.

Going inside the room, Ye Che sat in front of the round table.

Fei Yan also followed him; she sat beside him, bringing the wine that she prepared every day, pouring a cup of wine, and placed it in front of Ye Che.

This is the wine that Third Young Master likes, when Third Young Master tasted the wine for the first time, Fei Yan still remembered how satisfied and happy he was. After that, every time Third Young Master comes to visit her, he would drink a little bit of this wine. Fei Yan is used to it, she always prepares it earlier, afraid that Third young Master might suddenly pay a visit to her.

Looking at the sparkling and translucent fluid of the cup of wine, suddenly Fei Yan feels sad and said: “Third Young Master, it has been sometime that you have not come to visit Fei Yan. Fei Yan is really afraid that because you already have a wife, already have a small family, you will forget about Fei Yan.”

“These past few days, the business is having problems.” Ye Che said coldly.

This kind of answer does not really satisfy her.

It seems it has been so long that he had no thought of visiting her! Even today, when he comes, he just did not realize that his feet brought him here. This time when he came here, it feels like old matters.

“What problems with the business? Is it something Fei Yan could help?”

Because of Fei Yan's word, suddenly Ye Che thinks about another person.

That day, she also said similar words to him; she said that she wanted to help him. That time she put a really serious facial expression, thrilling his heart, makes him agree.

Without him realizing, her expression and her voice has been engraved in his heart.

There is no response in the expression of Ye Che, Fei Yan thought she said something wrong.

“Third Young Master, please don't misunderstand me, Fei Yan understands my own ability and status. Fei Yan is just afraid you might feel upset because of the business matters, so I said so quickly to give any help to you. Fei Yan doesn't want to see Third Young Master feel unhappy, Fei Yan doesn't have any other intentions.”

“It's not because of you. I understand what you mean.” Ye Che drank the cup of wine, just gulping it directly.

“Third young Master understands Fei Yan, Fei Yan is really happy.” Fei Yan exposed her sweetest smile, afraid Ye Che might misunderstand her.

Seeing Ye Che drinking the wine in such a way, Fei Yan doesn't understand.

“Third Young Master, before you always liked to drink the wine slower, tasting it slowly by slowly, not to mention it's the favorite wine of Third Young Master. Only when you feel unhappy will you drink in such a way, today Fei Yan could sense that you, Third Young Master is feeling unhappy, moreover you are extremely unhappy.” Fei Yan straight forwardly said.

“Unhappy?” Ye Che asked.

“Yes, you are extremely unhappy. I don't know what kind of matter or problem makes Third Young Master feels this way, but I'm really sure, Third young Master isn't like this because of some business matter.” After Fei Yan said that, her heart started to ache, why did Third Young Master said nothing to her?

“Ahahaha, Fei Yan ah~ you are really smart. You make me, who is a man, incomparable with you!”

Ye Che talked straight, nothing taboo, letting Fei Yan brazenly make a guess.

Her guess crumbled her, but she still needed to ask, she doesn't want to be hurt without knowing anything.

“In this world only “Qing¹” this word is the one that hurts most! Third Young Master, is it because of Qing you acted this way?” in Fei Yan's voice there is a kind of trembling, her tears dropped, wetting her eyes.

While the cup of wine that Ye Che's hand is holding, because of her word, it fell down and hit the table.

“Third Young Master?” Seeing how Ye Che reacted, Fei Yan knew that her guess was right, she lost.

She has nothing to say, her tears started falling.

Note :

1] 情 Qing : literally means feeling or Love. but sometimes also refer to emotion.

To this point, Long Mo Er hasn't know about Ye Che going to Bai Hua Lane because she just woke up from her beautiful dream.



(Don't mind the picture, I just want to put it for personal preferences, hehehehe)

Chapter 32 The Memory of Moonlight

From far off the sky exposes a white light, slowly making the sky brighter.

From the window, emerald jade green grass on the ground, the moist bead of crystal liquid, the sparrows in the tree are chirping.

Inside the room, Long Mo Er is lying down on her bed, nervously closing her eyes, her lips exposes a slight smile.

Quite a while later her eyes move.

After a moment, Long Mo Er opens her eyes, she wakes up.

In the moonlight, as if she had a very beautiful dream.

She dreamt about Ye Che, Ye Che sat on her bed; he used very warm eyes to look at her. And he even said many good words to her; even though she forgot the details about it.

But still, she could feel that it is a kind of sweet word.

This is one of the best dreams she's ever had, she doesn't feel any hurtful feelings, pain or sadness, but she feels a sweet feeling. She wants to live in her dream, doesn't want to get up.

But, why should the sky be bright? Long Mo Er complained looking at the brilliant light from outside.

Long Mo Er doesn't want to move, doesn't want to get up, she is scared that when she wakes up, all the sweet things will be gone, only in this way does she feels so comfortable. She wants to keep this kind of feeling for a moment.

It reminded her of when she was a little girl, she was hugged by her father and mother; at least it gives the same feeling. Long Mo Er thought.

"In the dream, how could he be so warm? How could he say so many good words to me? What did he say to me, actually? How come I can't recall? Aiya! Why can't I recall any words he said?" Long Mo Er spoke to herself and shook her head.

She is trying hard to remember the details, but no matter how hard, she couldn't recall it, she blanks.

“Aiya, actually what did he say to me?”

Long Mo Er pats her head, annoyed and throws the blanket that covered her, as she jumped from her bed.

“Why am I so stupid? Why can't I remember anything that he told me?”

After both of her feet stepped on the floor, Long Mo Er just discovered she was still wearing yesterday's dress.

“I don't have a habit of wearing outer clothes when I sleep!” She tried to remember yesterday's matter, suddenly, the image of Ye Che popped out in her memory. “Ah~ that's right, Ye Che was here.”

She remembered yesterday when she went home, Ye Che was in her room, that time she was so sad and hurt, she couldn't control herself when she saw him; she couldn't control herself from crying and hugging him.

Then, she didn't remember anything.

“Did Ye Che carry her into the bed?” just thinking about it, her heart started to beat crazily.

“Did he really talk so long with me? Am I daydreaming? Or was it true?”

Long Mo Er showed a facial expression of disbelief.

What did Ye Che say? Why does my brain not remember and forgot such an important matter? Why did I fall asleep? How can he come and wait for me in here? Was there any problems? Ye Che's warm look, she could still sense it.

“Oh My, I should find him. I want to hear what he told me yesterday.”

After she made her decision, Long Mo Er even cut her bathing time, opens the door and directly went out. She wants to find Ye Che and ask him for the details.

Chapter 33 Big Sister Pays a Visit

“Butler Jiang, did you see Ye Che?”

Long Mo Er sees butler Jiang from the big hall, then called onto him.

Butler Jiang comes closer in her direction; seeing her messy appearance, he used a weird glance to look at her.

Long Mo Er feels some discomfort being looked at in such a way: “May I ask, did you see Ye Che?”

“Third Young Master should be in the study room!” regarding Third Young Master and Third Young Madam’s marriage, both of them have a separate room when sleeping, The employees, servants, maids and others in the Ye’s residence understand the reason, even if it is weird they don’t think it’s weird anymore; moreover, they even think it is something very normal.

But this early morning, after waking up, Third Young Madam looking for Third Young Master is a little bit odd. Moreover, the matter regarding yesterday’s incident about Young Third Madam visiting the Tea House, everyone knew it. And today, she even acts as if nothing happened; still daring to ask about Third Young Master, this really...

“I looked there, but he wasn’t there.”

“Third Young Madam, Third Young Master hasn’t shown up since yesterday afternoon, perhaps he is still busy!”

At this moment, one of the servants came and said: “Third Young Madam, second Miss from the Long’s household Long Mo Er is coming to pay a visit.”

Once the word bursts out, Long Mo Er forgot to keep on asking about Ye Che.

“Long Mo Er?” hearing her own name being called, Long Mo Er is dumbfounded. “Second Miss from Long Household?”

Isn’t that person her? Long Mo Er is coming to pay a visit?

Ah, that's right. She is using Long Wan Er's status now, so, Long Mo Er should be her big sister?

Is big sister coming to see me?

"Third Young Madam?" Long Mo Er didn't give any response, so the servant just called her once more time.

"Ah, hurry up, hurry up tell her to come in." Long Mo Er excitedly said.

This is more than good, big sister is coming to see me; big sister is coming to find her. It has been quite some time since they saw each other; she doesn't know whether big sister is good or not? Really miss her.

But, why did big sister suddenly come to pay a visit?

Did something happen at home? If not why is big sister taking a risk by coming to visit Ye's residence?

Well, everything that happened should be blamed on her. She is having ups and downs of emotion recently, causing her to forget to visit her home to see the situation. Initially she made plans to escape from here, but because of her weird ups and downs of emotions, she forgot everything.

Did something happen at home?

Long Mo Er tries hard to extract some information from her head; she hopes to find some clues from it.

At one point she got worried, but on another point she became really excited, waiting for her big sister, Long Mo Er is inside the big hall, walking to and fro, filled with expectation while looking at the big door.

Butler Jiang sees her movement, walking to and fro inside the big hall, he feels a little bit irritated. This Third Young Madam, no matter how he looks, she doesn't even seem to be the big Miss from an educated family, there isn't any slightest elegant aura, why do Lao Ye and Fu Ren agree to this kind of marriage? No wonder Third Young Master is not willing to have a wife and get married.

Butler Jiang knows very well, Third Young Master had been arguing with Lao Ye and Fu Ren unpleasantly because of this matter, puts all the blame to Long Mo Er because the relation between Young Master with his parents turned bad, all

because of Long Mo Er. So, from the beginning he dislikes her very much.

Butler Jiang is busy thinking of this matter, didn't know that someone is standing in front of the big door. While Long Mo Er dashed to go out.

"Big sister." Once she sees that familiar person more than familiar for her, Long Mo Er forgets and just called out, she hugs Long Wan Er.

Sensing that her big sister feels discomfort and change, Long Mo Er realizes, she called wrongly. After glancing at Butler Jiang's and other employees' expression, Long Mo Er faked and laugh louder, releasing Long Wan Er, even busying to correct, and said: "Big sister~ big sister really miss you! Mo Er!"

After Butler Jiang heard Long Mo Er made a correction to her words, he didn't allow himself to lower his guard. Luckily he has a goodrestraint and stronger mentality, if not he might go insane seeing this wild and insane Third Young Madam.

"I also miss you." Long Wan Er said. She looked at Long Mo Er face, her eyes still swelling. "What kind of dress is this? Did you just wake up?"

"Don't talk about this, did something happen at home? Why did you come?" Long Mo Er panicking asked.

"Nothing happened, you don't need to worry. Everything is fine, father and mother are also good" said Long Wan Er.

"Father and mother misses you so much, letting me come to pay a visit to see you."

Butler Jiang from his line of vision, looked at Long Wan Er, he started to examine her.

Chapter 34 The Unusual Butler Jiang

After seeing Long Wan Er's fine delicate fingers, fair and clear white skin, beautiful neck, an elegant aura, and a beautiful face frame. Her smiling face and beautiful eyes. She wears a green, beautiful, long dress, her entirety looks perfect.

Butler Jiang paused for a moment, he prefers this young lady in front of him.

Seeing Butler Jiang still standing beside them, Long Mo Er opened her mouth and said: "Butler Jiang, this is my little sister Long Mo Er, Mo Er, this is Butler Jiang."

"Butler Jiang, how are you." Long Wan Er greeted him with a gentle smile.

This kind of smile, this kind of voice, really makes Butler Jiang respect her more. He feels this warm and gentle lady who is easy to make people like her, this kind of lady is more suitable for his Third Young Master. Compared to the lady who looks hideous and messy.

"Miss Long, the two of you sisters must have not seen each other for a long time and must have many things to talk about; I won't disturb both of you, if there are any orders, just let me know." Butler Jiang understands that both sisters have many things to say, so he as the outsider must not be there.

"Alright, thank you butler Jiang." Long Wan Er politely answered, her face still showed a gentle smile.

Butler Jiang also gave a smile; he doesn't even look at Long Mo Er a bit, then he walked away.

"Are my eyes turning worse? Butler Jiang is smiling.

Long Mo Er is shocked when she saw Butler Jiang's facial expression before leaving.

"He he, hag? Is there something wrong? Butler Jiang seems to be a nice person!" Long Wan Er didn't sense anything wrong, she even thinks Butler

Jiang's smiling expression is something very normal, is that person someone who can't laugh?

"It's strange. He is the only person in this Ye's residence who is difficult to deal with. Every time I meet him, he always shows a displeased and strict expression, compared with him, Ye Lao Ye and Ye Fu Ren are friendlier. He never gives me face, I fear him a little bit."

"How can?"

"I don't know, perhaps he dislikes me!" Long Mo Er said calmly, but inside her heart, she is not as calm as can be seen.

All the family members of Ye's residence are good to her, but only Butler Jiang always gives a serious look every time he sees her, from the beginning, even until now, nothing has changed, she always sensed Butler Jiang's dislike of her. Every time she stands face to face with Butler Jiang, she should be careful in either words or attitudes, she does not dare show "inappropriate" movement; she is afraid Butler Jiang might hate her more.

Since she was young until now, this is the first time she could sense someone's dislike for her from the heart; she feels a little bit frustrated and sad.

"Aiya, don't say anymore."

Long Wan Er could sense the changing atmosphere in Long Mo Er, she doesn't know the whole story, so she does not dare to ask, afraid that she might say something unnecessary and influence Long Mo Er's mood, making her sadder.

Long Mo Er looked around, sees no one then said: "Big sister, I'll bring you to my room, and let's have a chat. I have many things to say."

Long Wan Er nods her head, she puts on an elegant smile, holds Long Mo Er hand's and strolled inside Ye's residence.

This chapter more to girl talk for me rather as secret conversation because Long Wan Er and Long Mo Er are talking many thing about themselves during the time they separate (Since Long Mo Er married into Ye's household).

Long Mo Er and her big sister, Long Wan Er is having girls talk.

Long Wan Er is happy because she can together with her beloved, but at the same time she also feel responsible for her younger sister happiness. If not because Long Mo Er took her place and married Ye Che, she might not stand in front here as Long Mo Er but as the Third Young Madam.

Chapter 35 Secret Conversation

Since young the energetic and cheerful Long Mo Er liked to hold her sister's hands when they were at home, even now. While she's always the one to reminding Mo Er to be careful: don't act like a muddle head, don't let herself be hurt or fall.

Both of them have very opposite characters and different movements, but they live by implicitly understanding each other for more than eighteen years already.

Long Wan Er always sees the energetic, brilliant and live life to the fullest Long Mo Er, all the familiar atmosphere slowly comes back. She even thought that Mo Er who got married into Ye's family might change on the day of her marriage and thought the days she spent with her will never be back again, but now this kind of atmosphere just make her feels touched.

Is Mo Er happy these past few days?

If it not because of Mo Er who married the Third Young Master of Ye's family, the person who would be standing here is her, isn't it?

So, how could she finally live together with Leng Jing?

Her happiness comes from exchanging with Mo Er, if Mo Er isn't happy, will she still be happy?

Long Wan Er could see the worries that she couldn't dissolve right in front of her.

"Sis, you see this is the place where I live." Long Mo Er pointed to the splendid glamorous room of hers. "Normally Lu Qun and I spend the time in here, Little sister Ruo Xuan, Big sister in law, and also Ye Fu Ren often come to visit me."

She holds Long Wan Er's hand and walks inside.

"The others rarely come, so there won't be anyone who will disturb us, I have many things to tell you. Is Big brother Leng okay recently?"

"He is fine, he even talks about you sometimes! Oh ya, where is Lu Qun? How

come I don't see her?" Long Wan Er's eyes swept all the corners, looking for Lu Qun, but she isn't anywhere, not even her shadow.

"That dead maid, after coming here, every day I can't even see her shadow, I don't even know where and what she is doing every day." Long Mo Er walks inside her room, pulling Long Wan Er to have a seat.

"Ah?"

Seeing Long Wan Er's stuffed expression, Long Mo Er quickly gives an explanation: "Sis, I'm just kidding with you, Lu Qun treats me very well, very loyal and always help me out. When you get back, please tell father and mother that I am very well in here, don't worry about me. You see, I am very good in here."

Long Mo Er stands up, stretching out her arms, rotating her body in circles, only to ensure Long Wan Er that she is really doing well, not thinner even by a little bit of meat or one less hair.

"Mo Er, have you seen your appearance, messy hair, no makeup, how can you look like a Madam? It seems that maid Lu Qun doesn't do her job very well!" Long Wan Er very dissatisfiedly shook her head.

"Sis, you know that I hate to put things on my face, it's uncomfortable for me. While the fragrance is too terrible for my nose." Long Mo Er throws a disgusting look.

"But you are already married, moreover Ye's family is a well-known family, you should put some respect to your own appearance." Long Wan Er knows Long Mo Er very well, especially her habits. But now, she can't act recklessly with whatever she wants, she should think about everything.

"Come, today I'll comb your hair."

"Nh, fine. It's been some time since you combed my hair." Long Mo Er acts coquettishly. Bringing Long Wan Er to sit in front the mirror and giving her brush to Long Wan Er.

Long Wan Er received the brush, using her fingers to stroke Long Mo Er's black long hair, very gently combed it.

"Do the Ye's treat you well?"

“All of the Ye’s family members are very good to me, all of them are easy to get close.” Long Mo Er’s hands play with the blue hairpin on the table.

“Ye Lao Ye and Ye Fu Ren are like father and mother, when I met them for the first time, Ye Fu Ren gave me this.” Long Mo Er showed the blue hairpin on her hand.

“Ye Big Brother is someone steady, he is very detailed in every small matters, he’s always thinking further to something that you would never thought about. Ye Ding is very smart and energetic, very lively and cute. There was a time he even surpassed me, he is the Ye’s family baby, he always makes the atmosphere lively, making everyone happy. Big sister in law and Sister Ruo Xuan are bright and calm also capable, one is so gentle and warm, both of them like to accompany me. Both of them have already become good friends with me.”

At one side Long Mo Eris playing, on the other side she is happy, her face filled with a brilliant shine, she wants to say all the good of the Ye’s family members to her sister, sharing it together.

Long Mo Er wants to vividly and colorfully describe her life, letting Long Wan Erbe rest assured and drive away her sister’s worries.

36

In this chapter, we could feel how deep and close the relationship between Long Mo Er and Long Wan Er. As big sister, Long Wan Er is someone nice, soft, gentle and responsible.

Chapter 36 It's Okay It's Love

It seems, Long Mo Er really has good life after married into Ye's household, there is nothing she not used to, she also doesn't have any constrain or become strange.

But, why she only talks about all the Ye's members goodness, and she tries to avoid talking about Ye Third Young Master? Do their relationship not in good term? Again, Long Wan Er feels bit worry.

“So, how about Third Young Master to you, is he good?”

Long Mo Er smile suddenly stiffen, Long Wan Er caught Long Mo Er expression changed. She ensured herself something is wrong, and then asked: “What happen? Mo Er, could it be there is a problem between both of you?”

“Nothing, nothing, it just not as you think.” Seeing how big sister worried about her, Long Mo Er panic trying to explain, she tries hard to shake her head, hoping her sister won't make a wrong guess.

“Ye Che and I, from the start we have normal interaction, but, afterwards...” she thought days ago when they were in garden, Ye Che shiny and bright eyes, Ye Che kissed, Long Mo Er face getting hotter, her voice is getting softer.

She by herself does not understand, time has passed for some time but every time she thought about that thing, her face still blushing, she really doesn't understand herself.

Long Wan Er seeing Long Mo Er blushing face, she bold makes a guess: “Have you do the consummate night?”

After Long Mo Er heard her sister question, her face turn become redder.

Before she married into this family, her mother had talked about something like consummate marriage stuffs, but she didn't care and listen, that's why she has many things that she doesn't understand regarding consummate in marriage life, but she seems to hear about things alike the relationship between wife and husband, this kind of stuffs.

Her sister might have wrong opinion, she tried to raise her head, being panic, she widen her hands and swing it in front of her sister, she hurried to turn back her body, but once she moves, Long Wan Er has already pulled her hair by hand, spontaneous, she screaming “hurt”.

Hearing Long Mo Er screamed, Long Wan Er released her hand from her hair, looking Long Mo Er whether she really hurt or not, gently massage place where she felt hurt: “Why are you become frizz? Is it hurt or not?”

Even though her mouth is blaming Long Mo Er, but Long Wan Er really worried and care about her sister.

“Not hurt la!” Long Mo Er fortitude said.

Her hair being pulled is really hurt, but all is her fault for being careless, her sister love is exposed by showing how caring she towards her, if she still says hurt, her sister may blaming herself.

“Big sister, Ye Che and I haven’t done our consummate night!”

She afraid her sister makes wrong guessing, Long Mo Er doesn’t care her sheepish, she said all the things regarding herself and Ye Che to Long Wan Er.

Time just flowing in such way; the sun is climbing to the roof.

Blue sky, the wind lightly brushing away.

Long Wan Er is seriously listen, her expression shows nervous but she also smile and laugh. Her expression changed as Long Mo Er keep on speaking, she follows the flow of the story.

She never thought that even Long Mo Er has married into Ye’s family, her guts still that bold, she even dared secretly going out from the residence and also bringing Lu Qun with her, moreover she even dared to do many unimaginable things.

She even dared to beg Third Young Master to bring her with him, only Long Mo Er who could do such crazy things.

“Big sister, I still don’t understand why I felt such pain after hearing Zhang Nian Liang words? I felt as if my neck is strangled, even for breathing it difficult. Am I sick?” Long Mo Er’s tear just dripping down.

“Foolish girl, you are not sick, you just falling in love with Third Young Master.” Long Wan Er puts her hands on Long Mo Er’s body, letting her to face her directly; she takes out her handkerchief, wiping Long Mo Er tears.

“You are falling love with him.” Long Wan Er smiled and her eyes exposure happy radiance.

Her stupid little sister finally growing up, she understands to fall in love, really making she feels so happy!

For these time, never seen Ye Third Young Master’s appearance, but hearing from what people describe of him, Third Young Master seems to be someone good and nice, if Long Mo Er could love him, it is so normal.

If not only Long Mo Er loves him but he also have same feeling for Long Mo Er, on that way, Long Mo Er really find her real own happiness, while she could genuinely and feel relieved to living and spend her life with Leng Jing Chen.

But Long Mo Er identity is Long Wan Er now, what will be happen if Ye Third Young Master find out later on in the future?

Should Mo Er using her identity as Long Wan Er to live here forever?

Chapter 37 Perplexed

“Love?” Long Mo Er heart is shaking with this fresh and uncommon word.

“Yes, you are already in love with him.” Long Wan Er surely said.

“It’s just similar like Leng Jing Chen and I, that kind of love.”

“I... do I fall in love with him?” Long Mo Er still uncertainly asking.

“If it isn’t love, based on your character, how could you stay in Ye’s residence for such long time and become very quiet? If you aren’t falling in love with him, why every time talking about him, you are blushing and pondering? Let’s say if you are not fall in love with him, the cheerful and happy of you how could turn to be sad and pain without any reason whenever heard about the Bai Hua Lane’s Fei Yan who is someone special to Third Young Master and also his confidante? All this matters, one by one of it, don’t you feel this is proved that you are already falling for him, do you?”

“Is it count as Love?” Long Mo Er perplexed. She tries to deny but she isn’t sure after listen to Long Wan Er explanation, slowly she gets convinced by her sister.

This word of “Love”, she never thought about it before, she even think that she will never have chance to experience it. But, after listened to her big sister, in describing that strong feeling, she really doesn’t have any good reason to refute.

She feels she isn’t doing things like she used to do for these past days.

Didn’t she have decided to be match maker for Ye Che and Fei Yan? Since when she has forgot all these things?

Why should be now? Whenever she heard they are together, her heart feels so much pain?

Where her strong will for rushing back to her house suddenly dim? And how could she forget of her purpose, wanting to get back home soon? And now, she just doesn’t want to leave Ye’s residence.

Why she keeps on thinking of Ye Che, no matter what time it is? Why whenever she looked Ye Che being troubled of business matter, she just can't resist herself to help him? Does she really forget herself that she needs to find a way for leaving the residence?

Why there are lots of matters for filling my head in these short of time?

How could I change as if I'm not as myself?

Long Mo Er really not understands what she should say, only word, she not able to say out.

She is not realizing that she has lost herself, her heart has been occupied, so that the reason why she acted strangely these time, all because Ye Che.

At least she comes to understand little bit. She actually cares about Ye Che, moreover she comes to liking Ye Che, but is this kind of like also called love?

Is it true as what her big sister describe, that kind of thing called love? More she thinks of it more she become not understand.

So what should she do right now?

If she really falls in love with Ye Che and all what she did and acted were called as love, what Ye Che would think about her?

Will he loves her?

Will he loves her as his loves to Fei Yan? Fei Yan is such beautiful lady, then how about her? Will Ye Che likes her, this kind of her? Long Mo Er uncertain.

Seeing how her little sister seems not to understand her own feeling, confusing with herself, Long Wan Er understands, today she has said too many things, Long Mo Er might not able to understand all the things in short time, she needs time, thinking about everything, then, she might able to receive all the matters one by one.

"Saying these much, you should let yourself to think about it, carefully. Big sister understand that saying these much of things in one day, it will affect your mood, perhaps scared you. But still, I hope you can see yourself clearly, I wish for your happiness."

"I understand, I understand. What you did all for my own goodness, so I could

let myself to see clearer about the matter in front.” Long Mo Er understands, her big sister isn't mean to scare her, her big sister is wishing her to get her own happiness. If the current she isn't get her own happiness, her big sis might never feel at ease and relieve. She forces herself to give a smile for her big sister.

“Big Sister, you don't need to worry about me. I will really think seriously about it.”

Special Chapters (39-42)

It's not alike my habit to shorten the translation or doing chapters summary.
But...

The story is so dragging and I don't understand why the writer wrote so long about Long Mo Er complicated feeling and also the misunderstand between Long Mo Er and Ye Che because of Zhang Nian Liang.

So, I tried to summarize "The dragging" chapters.

Don't worry about the full translation, I will still make the full translation for each chapters (chap 39-42). This summary for those feel boring with the dragging full translation.

Chapter 39 Long Mo Er's Fear

The gossip has spread within the City, Everyone came to know Ye's Third Young Madam scandal. Long Mo Er as the subject of topic didn't know that she has been hot topic for a day already. Without knowing what was going on outside the residence, Long Mo Er who was in Ye's residence with Long Wan Er, talking about her life in Ye's household, her days, and private life such as her marriage life with Ye Che.

Until...

Suddenly Lu Qun just bragging into Long Mo Er's room. She looks so hurried and rushing when Long Mo Er saw her coming into the room. Right before Lu Qun intending to open her mouth, she realized there is other person and the person is Long Wan Er, she was there, standing near Long Mo Er. Excited to meet her Big Miss, Lu Qun almost forgot her first purpose coming into Long Mo Er's room.

Long Mo Er asked Lu Qun why she being so hurried and she said nothing when she arrived, then she showed very exultant expression when seeing Long Wan Er

“Lu Qun, why you are shouting?” Asked Long Mo Er because Lu Qun voice is coming first before the person, herself.

Suddenly Lu Qun remembered her purpose after Long Mo Er asked her, then she said : “Little Miss, something happen, a problem. It about... when we visiting the Tea House yesterday, it not only the Ye's have knew it but all the people had known it. Just now, when Wang Da Niang came back from market buying vegetable, she said everyone in Jing City (Beijing) had already known it. Everyone was discussing about this topic.”

Long Mo Er shocked, her fears come to be true.

She never thought her meeting with Zhang Nian Liang turned to be hot topic. People are talking and discussing about her personality and attitude, They are also disdain her being shameless wife and also daughter in law of Ye's household. At this moment, she is thinking about how her father, mother, the Ye's thought of her and the most important, Is Ye Che know the gossip?

Chapter 40 The Gossip

There is no slightest surprised on Long Wan Er's face when she heard Lu Qun reported to Long Mo Er about gossip spreading for the whole day in the city.

Actually the gossip has been spread since yesterday afternoon after Long Mo Er leaving the Tea House and it became bigger on the next day.

Long's family had known it, before the gossip become hot topic in the city today. The true reason why Long Wan Er came to visit Long Mo Er was because she has heard the news since yesterday afternoon when she was at home, not only Long Wan Er but their father, mother and also Leng Jing Chen (Long Wan Er's lover) knew it.

The Long's were panic and also worried about Long Mo Er's scandal. Her father extremely angry while her mother worried so much. Long Lao Ye (Long Mo Er's father) wasn't blaming Long Mo Er because he knows his daughter very well, his daughter (Long Mo Er) might careless and young but she is someone has morale, understand what to do and not to do so he didn't believe on the gossip. that's why he angry with those who spreading the irresponsible gossip about his beloved daughter.

Long Wan Er even thought to visit Ye's residence immediately yesterday but she was stopped by Leng Jing Chen. She being reminded that they are "educated" family so it was so impolite to visit someone residence in late night. that's why she only could wait when the sun rise, coming very early to visit Long Mo Er and checks her little sister situation.

When everyone is worried about Long Mo Er, the person, herself is perplexed with her feeling and right after she heard what Lu Qun told her, her first question is, "Did Ye Che know the gossip?"

Chapter 41 Understand, I Love Him.

Long Mo Er worried about Ye Che, she couldn't find Ye Che so she asked Lu Qun about her husband, Ye Che.

Lu Qun is not muddle head maid, she couldn't say where her Third Young Master because she senses something different with Long Mo Er, at least now she can feel, Long Mo Er might have feeling for Ye Che. She can't be so foolish or so straight like before when Long Mo Er asked her where Ye Che on the next day after their wedding night and she could so easy to say he was in Bai Hua Lane with another beautiful lady named Fei Yan.

Long Mo Er also not stupid, she knew Lu Qun was hiding something and she also knew Lu Qun lied when she asked about Ye Che and Lu Qun replied she didn't know where Third Young Master was. Her stubbornness finally opened Lu Qun's mouth and made Lu Qun bursting out where Ye Che was.

“Third Young Master went to Bai Hua Lane.”

this words enough to break her heart and pain her. Her body suddenly stiffen and her face suddenly wet of tears.

Chapter 42 If Love, Put a Courage to Pursue

Big sister, Long Wan Er still there and she could see how Long Mo Er expression changed.

“Bai Hua Lane” Long Mo Er cried after repeated three words of ‘Bai Hua Lane’.

Lu Qun shocked seeing her Little Miss crying. Her Little Miss is someone strong, cheerful, smart and active. She is not someone easy to cry even when she hurt because of falling down or stumble.

Long Wan Er as her elder sister understands Long Mo Er very well.

Love is alike two sides weapon, someone could be so happy of the sweetness but also could pain someone till death in other side.

Either Long Wan Er or Lu Qun helplessly to stop Long Mo Er tears, so Long Wan Er only gave advice and trying her best to make Long Mo Er feels better by saying many positive things.

Long Mo Er not really understand why she crying whenever heard Ye Che and Fei Yan together, with her big sister help, Long Mo Er aware of her own feeling and admitting, She loves Ye Che and she couldn't give him to Fei Yan.

“If Love, Put a Courage to Pursue.” Said Long Wan Er to Long Mo Er, reminding her the words she ever told her, when Long Wan Er was deciding to gave up Leng Jing Chen, and also when Ye's palanquin was in front of their residence door.

Long Wan Er has put her courage, pursuing her happiness with Leng Jing Chen and she hopes Long Mo Er could be braver pursuing her own happiness by facing her feeling and Ye Che.

“You need to clear the misunderstanding and tell him you Love him, Mo Er”

Starting from chapter 43, Ye Che leaving Bai Hua Lane and come back to Ye's residence. when he arrived, the first person he saw was Long Mo Er...

43

It took me long to decide posting this chapter (chap 43) or continue the fully translate Chapter 38-42. Trying to put myself in perspective as reader, I think you guys might looking forward the following chapter rather than reading the dragging chapters which had summarized.

Chapter 43 Waiting Him for Coming Home

The initially bright big hall, now it became dark.

The delicate small person is sitting on chair quietly, not moving even a shadow, her eyes piercing, looking at the main door without wink, she afraid once she wink her eyes, the person she wait will pass.

Her shows sleepy eyes, but she can't sleep: her neck feels stiff little bit, but she can't leave, her hand which support her chin is little numb but she can't let go...

Long Mo Er continuously reminding herself that she can't leave, she can't give up.

Her big sister said was right, she shouldn't overly think and blind guessing, she wanting to tell the person she likes, that she loves him and letting him to know. She wants to clear up the gossip which had spread. She doesn't want Ye Che mistaken her.

She must wait him till he come back.

"Little Miss, you have been waiting for some hours, no one knows when Third Young Master will come home, let's back to your room! When Third Young Master comes home, I will let the guard who guarding the main door to inform you, will it okay?" Lu Qun walked out to the front from Long Mo Er, seeing Long Mo Er persistent and still waiting, not even moving from her place, she walked to her side and persuade her.

"No, I will wait till he comes back and tell him clearly." Long Mo Er who sat on the chair stubbornly said.

"Little Miss, how about bringing the food to here. At least you should eat!" dealing with Long Mo Er stubbornness, Lu Qun doesn't have any idea, she can only do as what her Little Miss wants and please.

"No! if you feel tired, then you go back first, I am fine." Said Long Mo Er.

"I am not tired, Little Miss, I will company you to wait in here!" her Little Miss allowed her to take her leave, she really wants! But her Little Miss is waiting in

here almost for whole day, she even not eat anything, how can she at ease leaving her and takes her rest? She only can beg, Third Young Master to come back faster! Please don't bully her Miss anymore.

Long Mo Er said nothing while Lu Qun accompanied her in silent.

Time is getting late and sky is getting darker, inside the big hall the lantern is lilted, the flame swaying little bit because of wind.

Lu Qun is trying her best not to fall asleep while sitting in another chair with the dim light.

Finally the front door have pushed, Long Mo Er could see Ye Che's shadow from the poor quality light of the flame in lantern, slowly he is walking inside the big hall.

She hurried stand up from her chair, initially there is no sweet smile of happiness that exposure. But at the moment when she saw him comes home, he finally comes home, he is not thinking to keep on staying in Fei Yan's place, it really too good.

Ye Che walking inside from the main door, he sees a delicate shadow of someone. After about two minutes, finally he sure who is the person of that shadow. Initially his mood agitated, when seeing her, he doesn't know why he feeling boiled.

Why hasn't she taken a rest?

Why she's in here? What is she doing?

Is she waiting for someone?

Is she waiting him? Ye Che is guessing.

Should he and she meeting? Or should he directly turn to study room?

After all the spreading gossip, what she intend to do?

Not to wait till Ye Che could response, his footsteps have brought him to the big hall direction.

He could see her sweet smile, because of his appearance, he could see she looking at him with her bright eyes, able to see her walking closer to him.

Why she such so happy?

How could she act such way after doing many things at his back, and still able to exposure her sweet smile?

Did she think everything that done was nothing?

44 – 45

Chinese New Year is coming and I will be so busy. The translation will be slower and I hope you guys understand.



Chapter 44 Long Mo Er's Confession

"You are back!"

Doesn't know when, but Long Mo Er already stand in front of Ye Che, She even giving a gentle smile.

"I have been waiting for you, I have something to tell you."

Ye Che didn't give any response, but he also didn't intended to stop her speaking, only by looking her face, he waiting her to finish her words.

Actually, he shouldn't walk toward her, shouldn't hear what she said, furthermore he shouldn't give her a chance to get closer to him...

But...

Why he couldn't control himself every time he sees her? His response and his thought always slower, in order to avoid him gets control, he even tried to cooperate with her.

Shouldn't act in this way!

She had lied to him, she betrayed him, but how he still can be so interested on her?

Should remember she had lied and betray his feeling!

First time to come understand about his own feeling, but what he got was being lied, his heart ache, how could he forgive her?

In the meantime, Long Mo Er is considered how to explain, while Ye Che's eyes shown slightly bitter expression, his beautiful face starting to frown, his body radiating coldness aura which make her afraid.

Ye Che didn't want to see Long Mo Er who is lower her head, have thinking for something, he preparing to turn back and leaving.

She could sense Ye che will turn his back, Long Mo Er naturally pulling him using her hand, her pair of hand is grabbing his arm, hugging his arm tightly.

"You can't go, I haven't told you anything."

She couldn't let him walk away in this way, no matter what will happen, she still need to make him understand. She had waited for the entire afternoon, she doesn't want to lose the only chance and opportunity to give an explanation to him.

Ye Che cold expression, his cold and frozen eyes are piercing into Long Mo Er panic face. When he didn't see any intentional of Long Mo Er to loosen her hands, coldly Ye Che said: "You let go."

His face expression is cold which makes others scared of him, but even Long Mo Er being afraid, she even can't let him off. In order to reach their peaceful days, Long Mo Er gritting her teeth and look outside stubbornly.

"I won't let you go. I know once I loosen up, you will leave me. Before I finish with my words, I won't let you go."

"So what do you want to tell me?" Ye Che still with his frozen expression, stay still.

"Well, I said! Before I finish, you are not allowed to get angry, you also should hear till the end or else you can't leave." She even grab his arm tightly and stronger.

Based on her character and nature, Ye Che knows that if he doesn't hear her till end, she won't give up. She wants Ye Che listen to hers, but she is still talking about the conditions, whether leaving or not, that is his decision, so what can she do?

"Yesterday, I was secretly went out from residence." Realizing Ye Che's expression even colder, Long Mo Er hurried apologizing. She showed pity face and said: "I am sorry, I knew without having your permission I was secretly went out from the residence, really was my mistake, I hope you to forgive me."

"So, these all you want say to me? I have heard it, could you let my hand off?" he doesn't have any interest to listen on what she done yesterday.

"No, I haven't started yet, you can't go." She not being scared with Ye Che's cold voice, Long Mo Er even showed her stubbornness.

Chapter 45 Long Mo Er's Confession (2)

“After I secretly out from residence, incidentally in the street I met your friend, that person whom we met last time, Young Master Zhang

She could feel Ye Che's hand stiffen, Long Mo Er fasten her words: “I thought you and him are best friend! He even said he close with you, I thought he said the truth. He inviting me to have tea in Tea House, so I followed him.”

Said till here, Long Mo Er felt she would be really in troubled. She wanted to hear something more about Ye Che from Zhang Nian Liang, that why she took his invitation to Tea House. She never thought that, those she wanted to know, none of it she could get the information from Zhang Nian Liang, on the contrary, she only given an information about how important Fei Yan in Ye Che's heart, a special person. Letting her being hurt, so that was the truth!

She put all the blame on him because he never said anything clear about Zhang Nian Liang, letting her to believe that both of them (Ye che and Zhang Nian liang) are best friend. If not because of him, she won't do such stupid thing. Well, it had happen, everyone said she is kind of playgirl, she even being misunderstood by everyone, furthermore she even afraid that he will ignore her so she keep on apologizing. Didn't she pity?

Inside her heart, she continued to complain, but these words she not even dared to speak. She thought Ye Che could hear her complain words, the chances for getting opportunity to give an explanation, he might not give.

“After that, when I was in Tea House, I met big brother and Fourth brother, so I followed them went home. Young Master Zhang and I didn't have anything, all the gossip are not true, you don't believe la!”

After Long Mo Er finished, she stemmed and looked Ye Che.

She has told him the whole story from beginning till the end, clearly. He should understand, shouldn't he? He won't angry, will he?

“Are you finished? Loosen my hand!” there nothing like Long Mo Er thought happen, Ye Che even irritable.

“You seem to be angrier? Why?” Long Mo Er mumbling.

Being frightened Long Mo Er released his hands, making Ye Che to free his hand. He turned back, without any hesitation, he leaving.

How could be like this?

Why he still that angry?

Ye Che’s back seem to be blur and blur in Long Mo Er’s eyes.

She was waiting for him, because she wants to give an explanation for him. Her words, wasn’t he believe, was he?

Why his mood could be affected by her, controlled by her?

How could she mistakenly see him and Zhang Nian Liang that bastard as his friend? How could she that foolish?

Did big brother and Ye Ding who brought her back? So everyone has already known. Then, he was the last person who knew what a good things his wife had done outside. Ye Che showed his bitter smile.

Suddenly, pairs of hand hold onto his waist. He become stiffens, holding his breath, can’t move.

“I am sorry, I am sorry. You forgive me, will you? I don’t want to see you angry, if you angry then you ignore me, I will feel so sad. I promise to you, later on in the future, I would not do this kind of thing anymore, if I want to go out, I will tell you honestly, won’t do this kind of thing again, secretly going out from residence. I will be very good, staying at Ye’s residence. You don’t angry ah~, I beg you, don’t angry anymore.”

A confession chapter.

Long Mo Er finally confessed her feeling to Ye Che. She too panic when seeing Ye Che ignoring her and all the words just flowing such way.

Ye Che confused, perplexed, doubt. He questioned many things before he could confirm that Long Mo Er really make confession to him. He burst to ecstatic mood when she hugged his back and said: "I Love You..."

Chapter 46 Say, I love you

Long Mo Er doesn't want to think too much anymore.

If Ye Che keeps on misunderstanding her, how could she be happy in the future? In her words, she tries begging for his forgiveness, her pair of hands strongly hugging onto his waist, her face even sink into Ye Che's back.

A slightly warm, slowly by slowly spreading and get into Ye Che's back, Ye Che shows very complicated expression in his eyes.

He understood and knew his back's robe was wet because of her tears.

The burning hot tears mixed with murmured voice, strongly burning into his heart, letting him to loosen in guarding for his heart. He tries hard to protect his last "self-control", so he could hold himself not to feel any sorry for her, he not immediately turned his back for hugging her.

What is she doing?

What she mean by saying such things? How can his heart thumping after heard such words from her? Didn't she know that such word she said would mislead him? Didn't she know that whatever she says and do, all of them would make him to think she is caring about him?

"Later on I won't be rude and impetuous. Don't be angry, I like you, I love you ah! In my heart there is only you! I didn't do anything with Young Master Zhang, Beg you not to believe with all those gossips!" in order to give an explanation, Long Mo Er didn't realize what she has said. At the moment, she only wanting Ye che not to mistaken her.

I like you? I love you? Only you who are in my heart? Didn't he heard wrong, did he?

After heard her very soft voice, Ye Che's body become even stiffen.

It has been for some seconds, after hearing what she said, all the resentment, his anger, and all the negative atmosphere, all just vanish, disappeared. Suddenly there is warmness heat up, a benevolent and gentle feeling filled his

heart.

At that moment he really happy, feeling as if he born into new world as the most happiest person in the world.

“Ng... Don’t angry ah!” Again a soft voice got into Ye Che’s ears. Interrupt Ye Che excitement. He almost forget to say that he has forgive her already, he deserve to death letting her that sad during the time.

He hurried pulling a pair of hand which hugged his waist, turn his back and gently embrace her in his bosom, tighten up his hand said: “Stop crying, don’t you know whenever you cry, my heart feel as if it torn into pieces!”

Long Mo Er really doesn’t know what is going on, waiting for her to give a response; she even didn’t know when a pair of sturdy hand has encircling onto her neck, letting she forgetting to cry.

Ye Che deep voice passing from her head to her ears. At this moment she just realized she has been in Ye Che’s bosom, he has very masculine scent, embracing her tightly.

She doesn’t sure to lift up her head, but at the moment she thought about it, her head has been already lifting up by Ye che, letting her face come close to his embrace.

“Don’t move, don’t cry, I don’t have any anger to angry anymore. Just be quiet and let me to hug you only for moment.” Ye Che tried to suppress his stirring emotion, trying to be composure when said to her. For these past two days, he had enough for those messed up feeling of his, and now her words succeed to peace all those messed up feeling he had, only by hugging her, he has satisfied and nothing to say.

Long Mo Er heard what he said, to move, she even not dare to move, letting him to hug her in quiet, listen to his thumping heart beat “thump thump”. While she is also losing to control her heart beat which crazily thumping.

Happy Chinese New Year once again!

恭喜恭喜新年快乐

Finally I have time to do the translation. I was so busy on the first day till the seventh day of Chinese New Year. This is still one of the best Year I have. I was gathering with all my big family from mommy's side and daddy's side. even my uncle from Jakarta was coming here.

My sisters and I were going to many places, visiting our relatives and friends, of course we did it for red pocket too (红包) ^_^

Well, last time we were in confession part and this chapter is about Long Mo Er who forgot about the confession she has made to Ye Che which cause him to forgive whatever Long Mo Er did last time.

Luckily, Ye Che doesn't mind because he feel as long as she loves him, everything will do.

Chapter 47 Rethink, The Forgetting Confession

What was happen, exactly? What happen to him? Did he say not angry anymore? Is it true? Long Mo Er felt little bit unbelievable out of surprised.

Didn't he ignore hers? Even he made her so sad, but why at this moment he hugged her so tightly? What was going on with him?

Even being hugged by Ye Che so warm, feeling really so comfortable, giving her a sense of securer feeling. But, his changed was really quick for every moment, from the beginning till end, his attitude toward her extremely different which caused her feel even more insecure. She didn't want being foolish, hugging by him without knowing the reason, if tomorrow morning he suddenly changing into 180 degree, changing became another different person, what should she do? So she needs to ask clearly!

Thinking until here, Long Mo Er is trying hard to lift her head up, asking: "Are you really not angry anymore?"

Long Mo Er restiveness while Ye Che helplessly to free his hand, letting her to stand more comfort. But still by embracing her, he won't let her to leave his inner range. He is looking at Long Mo Er's naïve and innocent eyes. Ye Che heart's warm, letting him to think and keep on embracing her, forever.

Only like this, both of them throwing glances, looking each others, after for some time, finally Ye Che said: "You rest assured. I am not angry anymore."

"Is it true?" Long Mo Er so happy till brows, initially she has bright eyes but after heard what Ye Che said, her eyes as if twinkling.

"But, why?" at this moment, Long Mo Er doubted and she in confused mode.

Ye Che likes Long Mo Er sparkling pair of eyes, it seems alike twinkling stars in the sky, shinning and dazzling, making those who see that pair of eyes reluctant to leave, that sort of her is forever filled with lively power, he likes that kind of her. But, who's know at this moment her pair of eyes is hiding panic expression,

Ye Che smiled and made frown.

“Why aren’t you angry anymore?” Long Mo Er asked once again. Ye Che is frowning, Long Mo Er starting to worry again, she thought she might say something wrong which provoke him to pissed off.

“Do you really want to know?” Ye Che asked her back, set a glance into her eyes.

“Ng.” Long Mo Er made a soft movement, nodding her head.

It seems as if Ye Che didn’t see any other things than her face, he is looking at that small and delicate small face of Long Mo Er.

Long Mo Er didn’t know why his glance such strong, under his glance, Long Mo Er feels as if she is transparent, he could see through her, as seems all of hers is being seen by him, she hard to breath.

“You... You.. Why aren’t you say something?” under Ye Che strong glance, Long Mo Er stammering.

“If you want to know, you recited once again what you have told me before.”

“What I have said?” Long Mo Er tried to remember.

“This is under your request, *‘I didn’t do anything with Young Master Zhang, and please not to believe all the gossips! Forgive me, don’t be angry, I will be good’* those words?”

Ye Che shaking his head: “Not that ones, the others. Did you remember what have you told me before?”

Say what? Why she couldn’t recall it? What have she said before? She really forgot. Aiya, her own brain! What had she said?

Chapter 48 Two persons solely happiness

Long Mo Er shows worries expression, Ye Che is extremely happy, as if he never been this happy before.

Even he worries little bit she forgot of what she just said, but still, that words "*I love You*" was so naturally burst out from her mouth, absolutely he won't be wrong. Actually, if she forgot about it also good, based on her shy character, making she recalled, her face might change beet red, not to mention the probability she might turning back and running away.

"Alright, if you can't remember, then no need to remember." Couldn't hear that three words once again from her mouth, kind of regret, but in order not to make her becomes awkward, Ye Che didn't force her.

"But..."

"There is no but, as long as you remember I don't angry with you anymore, it fine." Ye Che stopped her to continue saying things, and then he tried to change the topic: "Have you been waiting for me in here all the entire day?"

Long Mo Er nodded.

"Stupid girl. Have you eaten your dinner?" Looking at Long Mo Er expression, Ye Che already knew the answer, with probing look, he said: "How about the lunch?"

Long Mo Er shook her head.

"Don't tell me you haven't had your meal today?" her face shown admitting expression, Ye Che didn't know how to say her.

Didn't take her meals because of waiting him entire day only to give him an explanation, he wondered what is inside her small head. Loosen her from his embrace, Ye Che held her hand and walking.

"Tomorrow, I will find another good maid for you, that Lu Qun really doesn't know how to take care of you, does she? You haven't had your meal for a day,

she even let you being alone, didn't she look after you? Only by this, she let you to do as whatever you want, I hard to imagine what will be happen in the future."

"You don't need to find new maid for me, having Lu Qun with me more than enough, Lu Qun had reminded me for many times, all my fault because I didn't hear her, stubborn forcing her to do many things that shouldn't be done by us. Please, you don't blame her, she is so devoted, if you need someone to be blame, blame me. All was my fault." Long Mo Er never expecting Ye Che would be unhappy when he knew she didn't have her meals, she even made Lu Qun to be scapegoat. Didn't want Lu Qun be wronged, Long Mo Er panicking explained on behalf of Lu Qun.

Long Mo Er voice which more and more closer is alerting Lu Qun who in dreamland (she falls asleep), Lu Qun awake. Standing and gently rubbing her eyes, her misty sleepy eyes looking at her Little Miss and Third Young Master, Third Young Master even holding her Little Miss's hand.

At the time Lu Qun really full awake, She is apologizing to Long Mo Er: "Miss, really sorry, I was intending to company you, waiting for Third Young Master, but I was felt asleep." After she said, she used her hand to pat her head.

"Seeing she has that good intend, I will take back what I said." Said Ye Che who saw Long Mo Er.

"But, if there is another time, I will really change her."

"Alright, I will be good." Said Long Mo Er happily.

Lu Qun didn't understand with their conversation so Lu Qun just stands aside. Seeing her Little Miss happy expression, Lu Qun knows her little Miss might reconcile with Third Young Master. On this way, she doesn't need to worry about her Little Miss, (sighed of relieve).

"Lu Qun, you cook something to eat, I want to company Long Mo Er to have dinner." Ye Che instructed.

"Yes, I am immediately going to prepare." Only to make Little Miss to have her meal, Lu Qun seeks but fail to get^{2]} (she helpless to make Mo Er eats). She doesn't want to see her Little Miss be hungry.

Seeing Lu Qun takes her leave, there is slightly laden with grief on Long Mo Er's face.

Chapter 49 Call Me Long Mo Er

“Are you okay? Tired?” Ye Che could sense something wrong with Long Mo Er.

“Could you promise me something?” Long Mo Er not really sure, doubt and asked.

“A request? You say first, let me to hear it.” Ye Che is so curious of her request.

“Later on, if there is no one, only both of us, could you call me Mo Er? Long Mo Er? Don’t call me Wan Er!” Asked Long Mo Er tried to take courage, looking at Ye Che.

Hearing how Ye Che called Wan Er, name which isn’t belong to hers, she feels burdensome. That name, alike something that reminded her as someone who is using fake identity to love Ye Che which give a sense of losing herself. Every time when he called her Wan Er, she is trembling with fear, being afraid without reason. She doesn’t want to hear him to calling her by her elder sister name, she doesn’t want because of this name, she being reminded that she is fake Long Wan Er. She doesn’t want to be reminded the warm hand that held her isn’t belonging to her.

She not really cares whether Ye Che will know or not one day about her real identity, only for this moment, she who has fallen for him, she wants to ignore and forget it. She uses all her heart only to cherish this love of her, whole-heartly.

“Long Mo Er? Why? This request is so weird!”

“Did you remember the first time we met?” Long Mo Er asked him.

“That time, I wasn’t obedient and secretly went out from the residence, I even created troublesome matter being caught by people, at the most critical moment, you appeared, made me safe and sound.”

Long Mo Er immersed on the most beautiful moment. Ye Che seem to be brought by her word to the first time they met on morning that day.

“That time I was introduced myself as Long Mo Er. So that, inside Long Mo Er’s name I have beautiful memory, the most perfect one. Long Mo Er compare to Long Wan Er, I feel “Long Mo Er”, this names is so close to me and also makes me feel more familiar. Moreover, there are lots meaning for me, later on, could you call me Long Mo Er?”

Ye Che is touched by her, thinking she has really in love with him. The first meeting, even engraved such deep memory, moreover that kind of “things” even become one of her most beautiful memory and the most perfect first time.

Mo Er, Mo Er, Mo Er... secretly in his heart, he chant that name, Ye Che realized Mo Er is more suitable compare to Wan Er, he worth over to think of.

“Could you call me Mo Er?” Long Mo Er asked once again, Ye Che not response, it makes Long Mo Er understand how weird her request, but still, she is expecting he can call her with her real name not her sister name.

“As I remember, your little sister is called Long Mo Er, if I call you this way, won’t she mind? Don’t you think it kind of improper?”

“She won’t mind at all. I have told you, both of us, like to play changing name when we were little kids, only because of name, she won’t mind at all because our relationship is so close and very good.” Hearing Ye Che hesitated but asking, Long Mo Er stills could hope for it.

“Mo Er, I will call you Mo Er in the future.”

Finally her wish come to be fulfilled, after hearing her name being called by Ye Che, Long Mo Er eyes twinkling. So this is how it feel when her own name being called by the person she cares most, a happy feeling, very touching till the tears fall.

“Mo Er, are you okay?” Long Mo Er eyes has tears, Ye Che absolutely nervous.

“Nothing, I fine. I just feel so happy.” Long Mo Er lifted her corner of mouth, she smiles.

“Foolish, you scared me to death! I thought you feel uncomfortable.” Ye Che pulled Long Mo Er closer to him, using his hand encircle, hugging her.

Below the light of lantern, their shadows reflecting how close they are

together.

Chapter 50 Happy to see each other

“Miss, does Third Young Master already know the truth? Both of you are reconciled. From what could be seen from last night when Third Young Master accompanied you for having your dinner, it seems both of you, your relationship have develop one more step! I know for Miss, this is something worth to cherish, you don’t need to lose your thought in here since early in the morning!” Lu Qun really doesn’t understand to see Long Mo Er who dumbfounded in front her.

“Ah! Nothing la!” said Long Mo Er absent minded.

“How could I never realize if the morning scene in this court yard is so beautiful and mesmerizing? The flower color is bright when blooming, the tree leaf is so verdant, the air is so fresh. It really can make people happy!”

After Long Mo Er finished her words, she takes deep breath to inhale the fresh air.

“Miss, I could see you have good mood, seeing everything is all good.” Lu Qun said while sweeping.

“Probably!” Long Mo Er admitted.

She stands up and walking to the middle of court yard. Pure and fresh air makes her can’t resist to stretch her body.

“So comfortable! If later on in the future I could do it every day, it must be nice.” Long Mo Er showed her sweet smiling face.

“You are wake up so early!” hearing Ye Che voice, Long Mo Er turned her back. Long Mo Er seems to get electric shock, turned her back, directly looking at Ye Che who has gentle expression on his face.

Seeing Ye che, she feels embarrassed to tell him that because yesterday matter, her mood is so good, she even couldn’t sleep at night, that’s why she woke up early in the morning. Kind of embarrassing words, how could expect her to say out!

“Nothing.” Long Mo Er just can say this all. To have second thought about him who is wake up this early and stand in front her, really unimaginable.

Is he not having proper sleep just alike her, so that he could appear in here such early?

“Why you also wake up this early?” she asked.

“The problems of the business hasn’t solve, today I still need to see the situation. I just passing by and see you on the way to go out so I stopped.”

No wonder he wakes up this early, so he wants to go out. It seems only she the person who isn’t getting proper sleep because of thinking of his gentle, caring and embraces. So, she really thinks too much.

“So you are going out now?” once he goes out, he will come back late of night, on this way, she might not get to see him of the whole day again. Hence, Long Mo Er asked him: “Can I tag you along?”

“You still want to go out?” her words just give sense of Dejavu, he still remembered last time she also begging him to bring her out too.

Once talk about going out, why she always wanting to follow? Does she really love going out?

“Again?” this word “again” said by Ye che, letting Long Mo Er to flash back for moment, she immediately react faster and said: “Last time when we were going out you tell nothing to me, to say, your words were less and pathetic. While I didn’t understand the circumstances, that’s why I couldn’t help. But this time, you bring me along with you, I will docile tagging beside you, and keep on telling myself that I follow you because I want to help you, will it be alright? Bring me along!”

“You better stay in residence! That kind of business is so boring and nothing so interesting about.” It not alike Ye Che disagree but if the business matters are not handle well, then he also can’t look after her, he just afraid she might feel boring.

“I want to follow you, staying close to you, I won’t be boring. Bring me along, please? I will be docile.” Long Mo Er stubborn wanting to follow Ye Che, she even not realized her way speaking is too childish and coquettishly.

Since yesterday when Ye Che found out her feeling toward him, Ye Che gets to understand her friendly way of speaking, she is entreat piteously begging him, Ye Che helplessly can't refuse her. He doesn't want to see her disappointed expression, so he nodding his head.

Long Mo Er is so happy as if want to jump, gently she hugs Ye Che's back before running inside her room, while running she said: " wait for me, I want to change my clothes, only for while. So wait for me!"

She is so fast even Ye Che does not have chance to react, she just afraid he will renege.

:D If anyone is interested in collaborating with me in translating this novel is more than welcome to. Just leave me a comment below or email me.

Chapter 51 The Fantastic Morning Market Fair

Searching for such long time, there is no girl that could move his feeling. Even the beautiful Fei Yan only match to admire and be friend only^{1]}. He even thought he won't never get married forever, and also never think to like anyone, moreover talking about love. Never come cross to his mind is...

Quietly Ye Che thought about it, while waiting for Long Mo Er.

Under the helplessly circumstances he married, still at the last beyond redemption^{2]} he is deeply attracted by this bizarre girl. It might destiny! Fated^{3]}, finally two people are destined together.

“Alright, let's go!” Long Mo Er said to Ye Che.

Ye Che looking at her, admiring the way she disguise herself wearing green dresses and skirt, looking at her, she is filled with lively energy. She is very active and not even losing her naive nature. She puts similar color of headband, making her even possessing natural grace on herself.

“You are very beautiful.” Ye Che praising her while his eyes showing smiling expression.

Lu Qun who also followed them, standing beside Long Mo Er, not slipping through anything, she able to see Ye Che's twinkling eyes, she can't help not to smile.

“Let's go?” Long Mo Er feels little embarrassed.

Ye Che holding Long Mo Er hands and then said: “Let's go!” Since yesterday, holding her hands seems to be habit for him, it just so naturally.

Long Mo Er is shy and lowers her head, her hand held by him.

Going out from the Ye's residence front door, she sees there is no horse carriage. Long Mo Er curious then asked: “Today we are not using the horse carriage?”

“Hm... Because it still early in the morning, we can slowly having walk to there, conveniently seeing whether there is new things or not. If you are tired, I can summon the horse carriage.” Said Ye Che who is showing his consideration.

“Oh, no need. I am not tired.” Long Mo Er anxious answered.

She doesn't want to use horse carriage, walking seems more fun! On that way she even can have window shopping.

Time is still so early, the market not really crowded. The traders and sellers are preparing to display their stuffs in their own booth/stands, while shouting “sell”. There are also people who leisurely and carefree walking in every corner and looking things.

The restaurant and wine shop are also wide open their door, greeting the customers.

“I never thought that there will be so crowded in this early morning.” Long Mo Er is excited.

Lu Qun who followed at back also feel same, it really something fresh.

“Today is the first day of Morning Market, everyone is coming to enjoy bustling scene, so there will be more people coming here.”

“Morning Market?” this is the first time Long Mo Er heard it, so she is not really understand.

“Morning market is the early morning market fair, it is the day which has been set before, the commoners are taking their stuffs which is not use anymore, taking out their foodstuffs, coming to this morning market in order to exchange with money or others stuffs that they need.” Ye Che gave detail explanation.

“It also part of business that we do, which is our money and things circulation.”

“Oh it is.” After listened to Ye Che explanation, Long Mo Er is understood little bit.

“I feel so grateful! For the first time I go out this early morning, I even can enjoy market fair, it really amazing! After I know you, there are lot of miracle and unbelievable things happen in my life.” Before Long Mo Er finished her words,

she paused for moment, then said: “But, the feeling is not bad!”

After Ye Che heard the way she said, it just gave him a hint that, actually he is the person who experiencing many strange things in his life after meeting her! But, he is still happy to heard what she said.

Note:

1] 知 zhi 己 ji 而 er 已 ji : close friend, to know one self.

2] 无 wu 可 ke 救 jiu 药 yao : no antidote that possible to cure (idiom), beyond redemption 3] 命 ming 中 zhong 注 zhu 定 ding : fated (idiom) decreed by fate

52

Long Mo Er got first gift from Ye Che!

Can anyone guess what he gave her?

The black pearl bracelet?

ah~ Let's found out what special things he gave her for the first time after admitted "She is my Wife, belong to me and I am her Husband"



Chapter 52 The Rouge Makeup Case^{1]}

At this time, a middle age woman who prettily make up suddenly appeared, obstructing their way. Standing in front of them and said: “Does this is the Third Young Master of Ye’s family?”

Ye Che and Long Mo Er are stopped, looking at the woman.

Looking Ye Che held Long Mo Er hand, the woman asked: “Who is she?”

Ye Che is not directly answered the woman, he looked at Long Mo Er, and then gives her deep sight. This sight just making Long Mo Er felt little bit uneasy; she worried how Ye Che would give the answer.

The Bi Xiao Xuan of Uncle Tong also ever asked this kind of question, so would Ye Che hesitate?

What was the meaning of his eyes sight?

She was so scared to hear what she did not want to hear, Long Mo Er tried to avoid Ye Che sight, she is thinking to pull her hand from his.

“She is my wife.”

Shocking? Excited? Or it is touching? Once Ye Che said, Long Mo Er did not even knew how to reacts about it, confusing with this kind of mood.

He said she is his wife.

Does this mean he is accepting her, admitting her?

Didn’t this also mean that he not that repel and hate her as the first time, on the day they married?

“So this is Third Young Madam! No wonder really match standing beside with Third Young Master! An ideal couple^{2]}, really perfect couple made by heaven^{3]}!” Said that woman put her smile.

Long Mo Er was in state of complicated mood, regarding to what the woman praised on her, she not really listened. While Ye Che and Lu Qun seem not to

miss even one word of the woman, moreover they were even waiting for the next lines of the woman.

Not as Ye Che thought, the woman just aiming to her the main purpose.

“Young Madam has very good skin! I sell this makeup rouge powder for such long time, but never seen any who has such beautiful skin as Young Madam! Just exactly two days ago I got this new makeup product, this product is made from the best ingredients, the color of this makeup rouge powder is match with Young Madam skin, the result must be best. How about Third Young Master buy it for third young madam!”

“Bring it out, let me to take a look.” Ye Che hurriedly said.

The woman is taking and choosing few colors from the shelf, she gave all to Ye Che so he could examine.

From the color and luster, it really a good stuff. Ye Che didn't say anything, just asking the woman to wrap all the stuffs.

“Hehehe, Third Young Master is really considerate person!” The outspoken and straightforward Ye Che, making the woman hard not to lift up her mouth's corner. It seems her first trade in the morning is easy deal, she even earn more.

After the stuff wrapped and hand over to Lu Qun, the woman said: “Since Third Young Master is so generous, how about purchase this Makeup Case and Box for young madam! Beside it can use the case as storage for makeup product, it also make the rouges convenient to use.”

“A Box?” Lu Qun opened her mouth, she is not really understands why the rouge need such things as Case and Box!

“What kind of Makeup Box? let me see it.” Said Ye Che.

It is so obvious that Ye Che has kind of interested in her Makeup Box, the woman is bringing out the gold color case, giving it to Ye Che.

“This Box named Shu Zhuang Yan Zhi He.”

Note :

1] 梳 Shu 妆 zhuang 胭 yan 脂 zhi 盒 he : 梳妆 shu zhuang literally means Makeup while 胭脂 yan zhi means Rouge (in french it means RED but in here the word is used for describe cosmetic product such as blush on) while 盒 he means case/Box

2] 郎 Lang 才 Cai 女 Nv 貌 Mao : Talented man and beautiful women (idiom), an ideal couple

3] 天 Tian 生 sheng 一 yi 对 dui : couple who were made for each other, a perfect couple.

Chapter 53 First Gift

“Shu Zhuang Yan Zhi He?” Ye Che put it on his hand, examine it carefully. Above the case, there is golden printed flower, the work indeed perfectly beautiful and well made. After he opened the case, he could see inside the case there are many small cases with equal size.

“Why it has so many small size cases?” he doesn’t have idea one big case has so many small cases inside it, what the function to do so.

At this moment, Long Mo Er also attracted to the cases, back to her sense. She so curious with the case when it was in Ye Che’s hand, she examined it carefully. “What kind of thing this is?”

“It called Shu Zhuang Yan Zi He, because the relation between rouge powder and dressing. It wasn’t easy for me to purchase that case from the coastal business people^{1]} and I bought it with high price. Inside the case there are so many different size cases, big and small ones which used to put many different kind of cosmetic products and also different kind rouge color. You can see this case is different from others case, it could contain all kinds of rouge at one place, moreover it easy to carry. On ordinary days, by carrying this makeup case, Young Madam can easily to have her makeup.” The woman explained.

“So that the function! What kind of genius could think this way! It’s interesting.” Said Long Mo Er who seems to understand and thinking the case as something interesting to play with.

“Seeing how Young Madam likes it, why not Third Young Master buys it for Young Madam! Don’t miss this one or there won’t be the second times.”

“Alright, wrap it!” The woman seems not wasting her effort to explain because Ye Che didn’t make her disappointed.

“No, I don’t want the case! I might feel little bit curious of these things, normally I don’t really like to put makeup so don’t need to waste money.”

Long Mo Er has thought about it, this case indeed something rare to find, something fun. But she also understood the case price won't be cheap, if she should spend so much money only to buy it, she really unwilling. Moreover, normally she doesn't like to put makeup or any others similar stuffs onto her face, there is no use to buy the case! Best thing is not letting Ye Che to spend for unnecessary things.

“Young Madam ah! This isn't about whether you like or dislike, it is two different matters. It more about you own it or not own it. These two matters are not same. You are so young and very beautiful having the case will boost Third Young Master reputation^{1]}!” The woman could not let the hot cooked duck^{2]} gone because of Long Mo Er's word, so she keeps on talking, persuaded her .

“You price it! We want to buy it.” Said Ye Che after the woman stopped talking, then he turned his back, facing to Long Mo Er and said : “This Shu Zhuang Yan Zhi He is my first gift for you, so please don't refuse it. Just think as my regard for you.”

The woman heard few words of Ye Che to Long Mo Er, she stopped talking and faster to wrap the case.

Gift? Is this case first gift that he presented for me?

He he! Long Mo Er is hugging the case and exposing her silly smile.

He might give her second gift, third gift? Long Mo Er looked at Ye Che's face, she feels so happy.

Is this kind of feeling that big sister and Brother Leng experiencing while they are together? By silently looking at him, she could feel this happy atmosphere, quietly walking beside him feels more than enough. She seems to be understand her big sister feeling, this kind of happiness.

To perceive what she thinking, Ye Che looked at her : “ What? Does my face have something that worth you to be this happy?”

She feels as if she is a thief whom get caught, her face turn to be beet red, slowly said: “Nothing!”

“Is it all?” Ye Che jokes: “I thought more you see me, more I look handsome! Walking together with me makes you feel happy!”

“Nothing like that~!” guessed right, Long Mo Er face even redder than before.

“Ha ha!” Ye Che is so happy then he laughed loudly.

All people who are near there, listening to Ye Che happily laugh, automatically looking at them.

She could sense people looking at them, Long Mo Er panicky said to Ye Che: “Faster, don’t play anymore because we still need to go to store.”

“Alright, let’s go.” Ye Che happily said.

“Let’s we go to the front store, if you are tired or hungry, just let me know.”

“Ng.” Long Mo Er answered sweetly.

Note

1] 光guang彩cai : honorable, reputable

2] 煮zhu 热re 的de 鸭ya 子zi : Literally means boiling or hot cooked duck. But in here, it has similar meaning as strike while the iron is hot (take opportunity before losing the chance).

Long Mo Er kept her words that she would help Ye Che to solve the business matters.

So, when she really serious listened to every conversation that made by Ye Che with his subordinate, she so quiet makes Ye Che surprised.

What kind of woman Long Mo Er is? Ye Che asked himself.

Disclaimer : This chapter has been translated by Azurro & English proof read by Apearlyview

Chapter 54 The Quietness of Long Mo Er is Serious

After hours have passed Long Mo Er has yet to say anything. Bringing Lu Qun with her to stand beside YeChe, she is seriously listening to Ye Che who is still talking business.

In this moment she hasn't forgotten what she had said before, she wanted to help Ye Che solve the business problems. If the business problems are not solved then all the members of the Ye's would be worried!

The previous mistake and misunderstanding which happened last time, she won't make the same mistake twice. She wants to show the smart side of her. Not just because she has Ye Che in her life now that she will become stupid and silly.

After she visited some stores with Ye Che, Long Mo Er knew more or less the real situation of the business and after a while she has discovered the problem the Ye's are facing—- there's a spy¹ inside the Ye's household!

The spy might be someone who has position and power in the Ye's because the person is continuously feeding information to the "Zhang Ji". Not only feeding the "Zhang Ji" inside information about the Ye's business, but is also taking all the potential customers away from the Ye's.

In this way, all the Ye's business situations are monitored by the "Zhang Ji". It is very certain and undeniable that a lot of the Ye's customers and business are being taken by the "Zhang Ji".

This type of business dealing, when she was a child her mother even told her this kind of story. But she never thought after growing up she will experience this kind of thing.

Her mother's story ending always said that the bad person would get bad karma as punishment. She believed by experiencing these kinds of things, the result would be more or less the same. The spy would be seized and the business theYe's family owned for more than ten of years will be more prosperous.

What kind of method should be done in order to seize the spy? She worries to think about this.

“What are you thinking about?” It is not easy for Ye Che to speak with Long Mo Er after talking about business. When he turns back he sees Long Mo Er in a “Fugue State^{2]}”.

While visiting some stores together she is quiet and seriously listening to every instruction he makes. He feels touched that she is letting him to see her serious side.

But why does she look so lost in thought? Is she feeling tired? Ye Che is blaming himself for being so careless.

“I am thinking about the matter the Ye’s business is facing.” Long Mo Er responded seriously.

“Oh? So what are your thoughts about it?” So it is not because she tired, Ye Che feels excited and wants to know more about her thoughts.

When she said she wanted to help, he was still hesitant about her seriousness.

Long Mo Er looks at the boss and the shop assistant who were sitting behind the table in front of her. Everyone was waiting for her opinion, while she is hesitated little bit.

Avoiding their eyes Long Mo Er turned and looked at Ye Che and says, “Could you let all of them wait outside?”

Ye Che stands up, laughs and says, “You guys can leave, there is nothing to discuss here. Let’s walk and talk at the same time.”

Long Mo Er receives the signal, she follows Ye Che and stands up following him from behind.

After they walked outside the store, they see a horse carriage waiting for them. Long Mo Er asks, “Don’t you have other businesses to take care of? Where are we going?”

“Get in the horse carriage first. We are going to Dong Jiao Si Xin Hu. I will bring you to meet my friends.”Ye Che replies while helping her get into the horse carriage.

“What kind of friends?”

“After we arrive then you will know.” Ye Che’s expression is mysterious.

Note:

1] 内nei鬼gui: 内nei is mean inside while鬼gui mean ghost but in here when words combined it mean traitor or spy.

2] 神shen游 you 状zhuang态tai :神游 is means a mental journey while状态 is state, mode or situation. I translate four characters as “fugue state” means Long Mo Er is thinking something as if her soul wondering to someplace.

Disclaimer : This chapter has been translated by Azurro & English proof read by Apearlyview

Chapter 55 Long Mo Er makes a move

“Alright, inside the horse carriage there are no strangers. Whatever your thoughts, say it!”

Once Ye Che says this, Long Mo Er’s expression turns serious and says, “Since early this morning I have followed you and listened to your business conversation, more or less, I understand a little bit about the problem of the Ye’s family is facing.”

“After listening, could you pinpoint the problem?” Ye Che is a bit doubtful on what Long Mo Er means by her understanding the problem.

There is a spy inside the Ye’s business, am I right?” Long Mo Er asks with certainty.

Long Mo Er’s words have shocked Ye Che and he looks at her with surprise. He never imagined that she could have understood the situation so clearly. It has only been a few hours, but he never thought she could have discovered the problem only by listening. Last time when he brought her out, she said nothing!

“I was being quiet and mysterious because there were so many people. I was afraid once I said anything the problem would get even more complicated, moreover if the spy was one of them, then the spy will take precautions!” Long Mo Er knew by Ye Che’s expression that her guess was right. It explained clearly why she acted mysteriously when she was in the store.

“Miss, what is the meaning of *neigui*?” Lu Qun didn’t understand the word her Miss used so she can’t restrain herself from asking.

“You shut up! I haven’t finished! Don’t cut me off.”

“Oh!” Lu Qun docilely stopped talking.

“Since we know there is a spy, but we don’t know if the spy has a partner or not, all the business conversations of the Ye’s business will become a problem. We should be careful to handle this matter without exposing anything.” Ye Che has not stopped her nor has he given any response to her, so Long Mo Er continues, “it is better to just let big brother, big sister-in-law, Ye Ding and you

know about the situation while keeping the others in the dark as a preventive measure in case of future problems.”

“You can give out fake information to lure the spy out in the open (Leading the Master into vase^{1]}.)” When Long Mo Er realizes there is nothing she wants to add, she has only thought this far, she gives Ye Che a laugh. “I have finished, there’s nothing more I want say, other than this I don’t have any more ideas. He he!”

Long Mo Er has hit the nail on the head (a saying that means she has come to the right conclusion), everything she has said surprised Ye Che and he doesn’t know how to respond to her.

She has come up with ideas that he has never even thought of. She makes him look like an idiot! In such a short time, she is able to listen beside him and come to a very detailed conclusion.

Actually, what kind of girl is she?

There’s an old saying: untalented woman’s virtue^{2]}! How about her? What type of girl is she?

Is it because she has never shown it before or is it that he has not really known her well? Thinking she might be someone who is careless but is now showing her intelligence! So bizarre!

Perhaps Long Mo Er’s family teaching is good! Coming from a literary family^{3]}, indeed she is not a simple person.

It seems his past judgment of her was wrong, he should get to know her better.

Lu Qun who is sitting on the side looking at Ye che and Long Mo Er, she could sense both are lost in their own thoughts. They even look similar. Is what others say true about “similarity of facial features are shown by married couples”?

It is really the first time for Lu Qun to hear her Miss speak in such a clear and orderly way. She and her Miss were together since morning following Third Young Master but she didn’t discover anything. Perhaps this is the difference between her and her Miss!

In a very short time, Third Young Master has changed his opinion of her Miss which she never imagined before. Once her Miss is serious, there won't be the slightest thing missing.

Falling in love with someone, can it really change someone to be different?

Note :

1]*引君入瓮 :I am not sure how to translate these four characters, if the words being translated one by one it will be: leading the Master/Lord/King into vase/ceramic jar. But it also can mean Luring the person into the trap.

2] 女nv子zi无wu才cai便bian是shi德de : a woman's virtue is to have no talent (idiom)

3] 书shu香xiang`门men第di : family with a literary reputation (idiom)



Annyong Fellow readers,

I have said for times and times that I will give and try my best to do better translation for my C-novel translation project so you will have better reading experience. Well, here [Azurro](#) is collaborating with [Obsidian](#) and [CJ](#) on translating substitute bride starting from this chapters and also English proofreading by [Apearlyview](#) (you have seen her proof reading works on chapter 53 & 54 before)

Little Message

[Obsidian](#) : I'm happy to be working on this translation project and look forward to collaborating with [Azurro](#). The Substitute Bride is the first book I read in

Chinese which is set in ancient times. And since Chinese is not my first tongue, I hope my translations due justice to the story line and mood of the plot

CJ : Hello everyone! It is truly a great opportunity to be able to meet everyone through Azurro's blog. I've been learning Chinese little by little because of Chinese literature, especially novels like Substitute Bride. As I was translating this chapter, I have found joy in knowing that hard work truly pays off. Please look kindly to me in this translation collaboration. Let us all enjoy Substitute Bride! A whole bunch of thanks Azurro!

Azurro : Thanks to Obsidian and CJ who are giving hands to help translating this substitute bride translation. Also Anna who had proofreading for while and [Apearlview](#) who is currently helping me even she might busy with her own translations.

If you have been following and reading my translation, I believe you will find out both Obsidian and CJ are translating more in order, better in grammatical structure than mine since both of them are English Native speaker (just laugh at my lacking, need to learn more ah~~)

Last but not least, have good day and please enjoy the translation

Chapter 56 (translated by Obsidian and edited by Azurro)

Lotus Flower

After an unknown amount of time, the carriage stopped.

Lifting open the curtain Long Mo Er looked at the scenery in front of her eyes, a lake spanning as far as the eye could see.

It was spring and an abundance of light pink flowers covered the sides of the lake extending as far as the eye could see. The flowers reflection in the water gave the lake an enchanting color.

“Woah My Heaven! Is this real? Am I dreaming?” Long Mo Er blinked hard. She couldn't believe the beautiful view in front of her eyes.

“This exquisite scene exists outside of heaven?”

“You’re not dreaming. This is SiXin Lake[1]. Ye Che responded, grinning ear to ear. “First, let’s get out of the carriage! I’ve arranged a banquet in that pavilion over there. You can rest and enjoy the lake scenery.”

Infatuated with beautiful scenery her two eyes saw from the window, Long Mo Er obeyed and got out of the carriage. As soon as her feet were on the ground, her hands tussled with Ye Che. Letting go of his hands she ran toward the lake, she looked alike butterfly that piercing into the countless gap among of the woods, dancing lightly and gracefully in the middle of flowers.

“Ye Che, how is it possible that the earth has a place this beautiful? I’ve never known a place as beauty as this before!” Turning her head toward him, she loudly shouted, she couldn’t stop her flitting laughter. “This place is soooo beautiful!”

“Be careful you don’t trip!” Ye Che reminded her.

Hearing her sweet laughter, Ye Che was already thoroughly smitten.

Long Mo Er was a fairy dancing in the breeze. The sight deeply affected Ye Che’s heart. He had eyes only for her and didn’t see the beauty of this place. Without any effort on her part, he was deeply entrapped, unable to escape.

He quietly stood by the lotus flowers admiring the fairy among the flowers. He was afraid to blink his eyes, concerned he might miss every expression on her face as she danced.

“Why are you still standing there?” Long Mo Er ran back to Ye Che’s side.

Ye Che blankly stood there not saying a word. He attentively watched Long Mo Er, his radiantly fervent eyes ardently gazing at her at a complete loss as to what to do. Suddenly Ye Che leaned toward Long Mo Er. His body radiating masculinity; her heart beat faster. Her palms were sweating.

Could it be? Could it be that he toward her ...?

Long Mo Er felt the heat of her whole body fill her head. Seeing Ye Che coming closer and closer to her, she nervously closed her eyes.

One second, two seconds, three seconds...

Without any idea of what might happen, her hair seemed to move. Long Mo Er

slowly opened one eye. It seemed that Ye Che was smiling. Thinking she might see wrongly, she opened her other eye and saw Ye Che's face had a huge smile.

"I saw that your hair had some flower petals in it. I wanted to help you take them out. That's all. What did you think I was going to do?" As he explained, Ye Che wiped off the pink flower petal in his palm, showing his smiling face.

Regarding her nervous and tightly closed her eyes were really interesting.

"There's a person waiting for us in the pavilion! Let's go!"

Ye Che turned around. Humiliated, Long Mo Er exerted all her strength to cover her beet red face. A soft apprehensive voice muttered, "Long Mo Er, how could you think of such a thing? ...Totally humiliating."

This moment, she really wanted to dig a hole and jump into it.

"Miss, is something happen? Why look so strange?" Lu Qun was on the side and kept on looking at Long Mo Er who making strange movement, While Long Mo Er didn't hear her.

"It's nothing!" Long Mo Er felt disgruntled.

This really was too embarrassing. How could she have the nerve to talk about it!

"Hurry up!" Ye Che shouted without turning around.

"Oh, I'm coming!" Long Mo Er replied.

"Anyhow, he doesn't know what I was thinking a moment ago. My face was so red! I'll pretend nothing happened... that will work!" Long Mo Er reassured herself and followed, trying to catch up to him.



Chapter 57 (translated by CJ and edited by Azurro)

Xi Yan Gong Zi^{1]}

When she arrived at pavilion, Long Mo Er noticed there was someone inside. In the middle of the pavilion there was a big table filled with food and wine.

The person who is sitting at back of the table smiled at her and Ye Che when they are approaching him.

Long Mo Er is examining him. He appears to be same as Ye Che. His showed smiling eyes, he has a tall and straight nose. His lips lifted up and make arc, they are moist and glossy. Comparing to him, Ye Che appears somewhat resolute and grim, while this man is more warm and easily to approach.

This is the person whom Ye Che said as his friend! So that those words about outrageous good looking person also be friend with same handsome person!

Long Mo Er thought.

Ye Che hinted her to sit down, poured tea for her, using his fingers to point the man who sat in front of them and said: "Haven't you always wanted to know and meet my friend? This person is known as *Xi Yan Gong Zi*. During this time, he was not at home, that's why you never seen him. Otherwise, he would probably always show up in Ye's residence."

This is the first time Long Mo Er heard Ye Che spoke such witty, simply to say she quite surprised! Is this because of *Xi Yan Gong Zi's* charms? Or does he have something special on him? Long Mo Er can't help but glancing towards Xi Yan Gong Zi for more few times.

"Xi Yan Gong Zi? Little sister Wan Er, please don't listen to his nonsense. What Xi Yan or not Xi Yan, what an awful name to hear! My name is Gu Na Yan. A name that elegant and nice to hear! Little sister you can call me Big Brother Gu or Big Brother Na Yan, all is fine. Ye Che this brat and I, since we were kids we likely to fight until we grow up and even we often got into fight, more we fight better our relationship become. So, Little sister after we met, don't regard me as outsider, I don't have sister in my family, I have heard about before, now after I met you, this is really good! Finally I have a younger sister. My house is just two streets from Ye's Residence. Just come and see me if there something need my help. You are most welcomed to visit my house anytime." Gu Na Yan said Enthusiastic.

Yesterday when he just came back home, he had heard news about Ye Che got married, it did made him scared out of wits! He really wanted to know how things happen, he wanted to meet him face to face. Initially he thought the meeting would go as usually they had, only both of them but turned out Ye Che also brought cute little sister along with him.

Looking from distance, seeing Ye Che and her acting so lovely-dovely, he guessed she might that legendary Long Wan Er. The carefree Ye Che has already married, this is really unexpected by him, moreover he could tell that Ye Che marriage life barely satisfactory, at last it still resulting him to extremely surprised!

Without doubt, there must be lot of things happen others than these which he

does not know, or else how could this beautiful lovely little sister able to move that heart which as hard as stone!

“Little Sister, Do I look fiends to you? How come you are not talking and you just staring at me? Am I looked weird to you?” This is the first time for *Xin Yan Gong Zi* who has been talking all the times and being ignored by girl, usually his beautiful good looking face has always succeed to make any girl fallen for him, but how could this time, this is totally not working to her? The thought scared Gu Na Yan.

“Oh, nothing! Big Brother Na Yan, I just realized the way you speak is little bit similar to Ye Ding!

“What?” Gu Na Yan exclaimed.

“Ye Ding? How is that brat could compare to me?” He felt little depressed. He really does not understand how the way Long Mo Er ways to see something. She takes Ye Ding as comparison toward him.

“Big Brother Na Yan, Ye Ding is very good! Everyone likes him! He is also very considerable person!” Long Mo Er just not understood why Gu Na Yan still dissatisfied.

“So, Little Sister means am I also likes by everyone? And does little sister also like me?” Once Gu Na Yan heard she said, he is so excited and moving straight closer to Long Mo Er’s side, sitting beside her.

Long Mo Er nodded, this is the first time for her to encounter someone so enthusiast.

“Big Brother Na Yan, Ye Che is a difficult person to be approached and how can both of you become good friends?” Long Mo Er whispered to Gu Na Yan’s ear, her voice echoing her confusion.

Gu Na Yan laughed loud after he heard it, he threw glance at Ye Che’s side that showed very opposite expression to Gu Na Yan’s mood, this even got Gu Na Yan mood better. It is because he able to see rare expression showed by Ye Che! Gu Na Yan absolutely would not let this opportunity slips easily for teasing Ye Che. Beside enjoying Ye Che’s expression, He moved and whispering to Long Mo Er’s ear: “He is not hard to approach, he just does not know how to act in front of

the person he likes. So that he pretends to act cold for getting the attention from person he likes.”

The person he likes? Long Mo Er’s heart started to beat wildly after she heard those words. She does not know how much she could believe on Gu Na Yan’s words, but still it makes Long Mo Er face blushing and she keeps lower her head down.

Note:

1] 戏 Xi 言 Yan 公 Gong 子 Zi : 戏言 Xi Yan means Joke or prankster while 公子 Gong Zi means young master.

Ye Che's Jealousy

“Wan Er, do you like the scenery here? You can see the entire lake from the angle you just saw. You can go and take a look.” Ye Che said.

“Ah?” Long Mo Er lifted her head.

“The scenery here is especially good. You can see all of Si Xin Lake. You go ahead and take a look!” Ye Che said again.

This time he didn't ask Long Mo Er. Instead he told her to go directly because he couldn't stand Gu Na Yan's manner toward her. What were they saying that she responded that way? What did that expression on her face mean?

His uncomfortable feeling was truly hard to ignore.

Long Mo Er clearly heard him. Immediately she said to Lu Qun, “Let's go look”.

This moment, she needs to calm down.

In that way, it allowed her to more understand her mood after heard Big Brother Na Yan's words. But now her mood is complicated, so she needs to ponder what Big Brother Na Yan really meant.

“Well, Little sister Wan Er is already enough far away. You don't need look at me that way. I it was just joking. Don't be that petty, OK?! I'm too familiar with that jealous expression and won't be able to sleep tonight.” Gu Na Yan was unable to stand Ye Che's stare.

“Che, please have mercy on me! this is the first time you've looked at me that way. You don't need to be that way. Come on, wipe that expression off your face!”

Ye Che didn't care to what Gu Na Yan said. Ye Che kept on staring at Na Yan with a murderous look, Coldly asked, “What did you quietly say to her just now?”

“Aiya, there was nothing!” Gu Na Yan held his wine cup using both hands. He drank the wine with a smile on his face. “Certainly not said any bad thing about you.”

“Are you sure!?”

“Certain. I know that today your coming isn’t simply wanted me to get to know little sister Wan Er. If you have business, hurry up said it!” Gu Na Yan heard Ye Che’s tone and immediately started to discuss the problem.

Every time Ye Che speaks with this kind of tone, he would tactfully shut up. Today his conversation with little sister Wan Er, he had no intention to tell Ye Che, he even planned to hide it from Ye Che in his entire life. This way he could recall Ye Che’s rare expression constantly. That expression was worth preserving in his memory! As smart person, he naturally made quick change the subject.

“The Ye family business has a problem that needs your help.” Ye Che said.

“Something happen to business?” Gu Na Yan blankly stared for a bit. He never thought there would day problems arise in Ye Business. “Che, you explain clearly, if there need help just say it”.

“Zhang Ji has insider that muddling things up for the Ye family. There’s a constant flow of information being leaked.”

“Zhang Ji? Are those Zhang Ji’s people that vicious and greedy?”

“It’s certainly him.”

“What were called certainly them?”

“That’s the thing we still don’t know, so that I came to find you, *Xi Yan Gong Zi* for help.”

“He, he. Well then, Che you should clearly give me all the particulars!”

As a result, Ye Che slowly explained to Gu Na Yan all the information about the matter. Even the careful details were clearly given.

Accident at the lake

Even if the cold wind from the lake constantly blows toward her, Long Mo Er's face remains hot. Even seeing the ripples in the lake brought little of comfort.

“My God! Is what Big Brother Na Yan said true? Or he is teasing and playing tricks on me?”

“Miss, What did Na Yan Gong Zi say to you? I am very curious!”

Since Lu Qun asked, Long Mo Er wanted to ask her opinion. While grabbing Lu Qun's arm, she asked her, “Lu Qun, What kind of person do you think Big Brother Na Yang is? Is he trustworthy?”

“Na Yan Gong Zi!” Lu Qun thought about it and replied with a smile, “Third Young Master calls Na Yan Gong Zi a prankster, the way I see it, he has a glib tongue that is why he got that nickname.”

“Glib?” Long Mo Er who seems shocked, suddenly let go of her arm looked very feeble. “In your eyes, Big Brother Na Yan is a trickster, then, he was just fooling me by saying those words. Those words... were all that just for fooling me!”

“Miss, I've not finished talking yet. Please don't be sad. Let me comfort you “. Lu Qun said looking at her appearance, silently shook her head. “I don't know what Na Yan Gong Zi said to you, whether those were important or not to you. However, Na Yan Gong Zi treats you warmly, this is a person who saw you for the first time and yet was good to you. He seems to think of you as a little sister, I think whatever he told you might be true. Besides, why would he lie to you?”

“Are you telling the truth?” Long Mo Er eyes flashing with joyous brilliant rays.

So, what Big Brother Na Yan said about Ye che liking me is true?

Ecstatic!

Long Mo Er's heart begins soaring with hope.

"Help me!....."

"Somebody fell in the water....."

"please someone help!"

"Can anyone save him?"

The distant murmur of voices can be heard intermittently.

"How come there are so many people there, let's we go there to see." Long Mo Er tries to go closer and see more and more people at the lake.

"Impossible there is someone fall into water, isn't it?" Lu Qun guessed.

"We need to get closer!" She pulled Lu Qun to where the crowd is.

When they arrived, Long Mo Er let go of Lu Qun's hand and worked her way through the crowd.

"What's the matter?" Pushing forward, Long Mo Er sees a little boy all wet on the ground unconscious.

"A small child fell into the water."

"really."

Next to the child, a woman knelled and took the boy in her arms tightly. And then, you can see in her face was wet with tears, and also grief and heart-broken expression.

Long Mo Er guessed that must be the child's mother.



Chapter 60 Translated by Obsidian and Edited by Azurro

Life Saving Doctor

The small boys' face was deathly pale; He seemed to be on his dying gasp. The sight of the frail life tightly grabbed Long Mo Er's heart which began to ache.

Was this young life going to slowly ebb away little by little in front of her very eyes?

"Which of you can save him? Who can save him?" Wan Mo Er anxiously asked, grabbing the sleeve of the stranger next to her.

"He can't be saved."

"Such a young child and no one will even try to save him?!"

.....

Long Mo Er barely had hope. The pitiless statement smashed her hope to pieces. Her heart sank.

She had never seen death before. Could it be that heaven wanted her here to see this boy die, sense what death is really like? See this mothers' grief and despair?

Long Mo Er's heart started to stir. Tears began to flow from her eyes.

In the midst of her tears, she saw a white form pass by.

After she started seeing clearly, that white form stopped by the side of the boy with his back facing her.

"Please lay him flat. He can still be saved." Standing, the white form examined the boy. He immediately started speaking with the boy's mother.

He still can be saved? Can this man really save him?

After this pleasant voice reached Long Mo Er's ears, she shifted her teary eyes to look at the form. The tears disappeared. Dumbfounded, she tenaciously watched his actions.

Everyone who thought the boy would die now had new hope. This man's speech ignited that fresh hope. Doggedly, people expectantly watched the actions of the man in white.

After the mother laid the boy flat, the man in white put one hand on the boy's abdomen. The man then put his other hand on top of the first and used all his strength to pump.

This ordinary action somehow brought back the seemingly lifeless boy. He coughed and then soon afterward spit out saliva from his mouth. He slowly awakened.

"He's waking up"

"He saved the boy."

"Life saving doctor!"

.....

"I need two people to come here and help. Use all your strength to rub the boy's limbs, warm him up as much as possible." After the man in white finished talking, he brought out a bottle from on his person and poured medicine into the mouth of the boy.

After the boy swallowed some medicine, the man in white started to leave.

The boy's mother and several people dressed like servants exerted all their

strength to rub the boys' limbs. Several maidservants constantly said, "Little master, beg you are doing fine!"

"Wow! This many servants... it seems he is a young master from a wealthy family. How exactly happened a moment ago?" Lu Qun said in Long Mo Er's ear.

Ignoring Lu Qun's trifling comments, Long Mo Er was now more concerned about the boy's situation. Even though he woke up, could there still be some danger?

"Change him into dry clothes. Then go home and have him drink Ginger soup" the man in white said. Then again he said, "He's alright, next time be more careful when walking in the lakeside."

Long Mo Er's heart had been hanging in the air. The word let her completely relax.

People were absorbed in the joy and surprise of the boy waking up. Taking advantage of the joyous commotion, the man in white quietly receded into the crowd and started to leave.

Long Mo Er carefully watched and pulled Lu Qun along, pursuing the man. She really admired the man in white who had just saved a life. He was like white knight. How could he simply go like this? What could they say to recognize him for what he just did!

The Mysterious Silver Masked Man

After walking for a while, Long Mo Er was worried the man who was wearing white robe will disappear, immediately asked the man to stop.

“Wait a minute.”

The man wearing white robes heard her voice and tried finding the source of the sound with an uncertain look.

After getting a glimpse of the man’s face, Long Mo Er and Lu Qun cannot help but hold their breath, gasping at the motionless man clad in white clothes watching them.

The man is wearing a silver mask covering half his face, just revealing a pair of eyes and mouth. With the silver mask, it is impossible to guess what he looked like without the mask.

How can this be?

How come I’m the only one who noticed him?

Everyone who saw him, why didn’t they pay attention to his unusual appearance?

Why is that?

Long Mo Er did not know what to say.

“Are you speaking to me?” Seeing Long Mo Er and Lu Qun’s reaction, the man’s mouth seemed to have curved at a slight angle.

“Oh, yes, I did.” Long Mo Er saw the slight change in his expression but can’t determine if under the mask, the man is laughing.

“What’s up?” The man in white asked with a soft voice.

My name is Long Mo Er, you were awesome!”

“It wasn’t much, it was basic knowledge as first help, those who understand swimming knows well of it.”

“But I didn’t! You were still great, I thought the kid was dead. You saved his life!” Long Mo Er excitedly said while recalling the mood earlier.

“Thank you.” The man replied making more movement under the mask.

This time Long Mo Er is sure that he smiled.

“What should I call you?” Long Mo Er asked. “you know how to save people life, are you a doctor?”

“Call me Bai Yin Chen!” He paused for a bit then continued, “As I said earlier, a lot of people know how to save someone who has drowned, it’s common but some doctors will not do so. Not everyone who saved people is doctor.”

“Are you more skillful than the doctor? Could you be regarded as life saving doctor?” Long Mo Er simply adored him, she didn’t understand what he was saying.

Bai Yin Chen silently smiled.

“I have something to do, I will go ahead.” he said and left Long Mo Er.

“Hey, wait...” Long Mo Er called.

Unfortunately, Bai Yin Chen has already left and did not look back.

“Miss, he must’ve not heard you.” Lu Qun said.

“Bai Yin Chen? Why is he wearing a mask? Oh well, that’s intriguing!” Long Mo Er said to herself in a low voice while looking distant.

Since I haven't found anyone who able to help me out with the translation of substitute bride, continuing what obsidian left, this translation project will take longer than usual. I hope I could keep the pace with CJ.

Translated by Obsidian and Edited by Azurro

Chapter 62

The Flavor of Happiness

“So this is where you’ve been hiding.” At that moment Long Mo Er heard a familiar voice with little enthusiasm in her ears. A warm feeling suddenly lifted her heart.

She wasn’t really accustomed to the flat tone of Che Ye’s voice. She turned and looked toward him.

“How did you get here? What about older brother Gu Na Yan?”

“He had something to attend to so he already left. Weren’t you looking at the scenery? How did you end up here?” After he and Gu Na Ya finished their short conversation, he looked all around but didn’t see any sign of her. Concerned that something amiss happened to her, he kept looking and finally saw her off in the distance standing here.

“It was a little thrilling! There was a boy who fell in the water. After being fished out (of the water) he was gasping and we all thought he would die. We never expected that at the last moment a doctor would appear. He did something with his hands and somehow the boy woke up. Really wonderful! It like miracle happening!” A distinct radiant expression emerged in Long Mo Er’s eyes as she spoke, looking at Ye Che.

Ye Che attentively listened. He gazed at her, fascinated by the changes in her eyes so much so that he couldn’t get enough. He was becoming more and more addicted. He had absolutely no way to ignore it.

“That doctor is a very extraordinary person!” Long Mo Er said.

“Extraordinary?” Ye Che didn’t understand her use of that word.

“He wore a silver colored mask.”

“Silver colored mask?”

“Don’t know why he wore a mask!” Long Mo Er drew back the corners of her

mouth and gazed in the direction where white figure disappeared.

“The world is full of extraordinary things. Wearing a mask is not that unusual. Don’t make impulsive statements.” Ye Che really didn’t know what was inside the small head in front of his eyes. Who knows what spurs the interest of young girls?

She really is very unique.

“Oh, I really didn’t think about that.” Long Mo Er exclaimed.

She immediately opened her mouth again and asked, “Older brother Gu Na Yan already left, so what are we doing next? Are we leaving?”

Not missing the constant changes in her eyes, between her words and her eyes, Ye Che guessed that she was not really serious about leaving. With a serene smile he said, “Today’s matter is almost completed. We don’t have anything really to do after this. Just now you joined the crowded so that you might not really take good look of Si Xin Lake’s beautiful scenery. Since we are not easy to come all the way here, let’s we stay here little longer before we leave. I’ll take you to look around.”

“Really?” Long Mo Er was a little overwhelmed by his generosity, speechlessly happy.

“don’t you want to take little longer to take a look? I thought you’d be happy here and not want to leave.” Ye Che said deliberately.

“No, I’ll go. I really don’t want to leave” Long Mo Er urgently denied. She didn’t know that Ye Che was joking with her.

“Then let’s go!”

Walking side by side, not close, yet not far from the lake, Long Mo Er and Ye Che were silent. Each were thoroughly enjoying this hard to come by moment.

As Long Mo Er looked at Ye Che by her side she was wondering whether God in looking down on her, was finally considering her yearning.

It seemed to be like her older sister chasing happiness; if you continued to chase happiness then it would get closer and closer.

But would the happy feelings continue? Would those feelings be allowed to

keep going on this way and not stop? Was it possible?

She intensely felt this very sweet secret feeling. It was as if this sweet warm feeling was in her blood, permeating all her veins.

Could they really keep going forward this way?

63

Chapter 63 (translated by CJ and edited by Azurro)

Chapter 63

The Arrival of Mu Rong Ji Zi

Since the incident at Yi Xin Lake, Long Mo Er and Ye Che seems to have taken things up a notch, they have been very steady, as if all the past of unpleasant things have not happened before. As long as Ye Che's shadow is seen at Ye Mansion, close beside it is Long Mo Er's shadow. They were almost inseparable, as is fitting and understandable.

Everyone at Ye Mansion can see and feel the change in their relationship. The servants that were whispering that Third Young Master will not be exclusively committed to this marriage, looking at the current situation, the Miss from the Long Family has completely occupied the Third Young Master's heart.

Despite this, everyone cannot understand one thing. Since Third Young Master and Third Young Madam evidently have such a good relationship, why is Third Young Master still sleeping in the study room? They are a couple, but why he still keeps on sleeping in study room?

Today, only Ye Che left the mansion, Mu Rong Ji Zi quickly rushed to Long Mo Er's yard.

Entering the courtyard, she saw Long mo Er sitting in the middle of the yard, a sweet smile on her face and her eyes looking faraway. The mild sunshine poured over her as if she was a sparkling golden iris. Radiating brilliant shine.

Mu Rong Ji Zi walking towards her, she is smiling and said, "Little Sister what are you thinking that is so mesmerizing?"

"Big Sister-in-law, How come you are here today!" Long Mo Er immediately smiled brighter seeing Mu Rong Ji Zi and stood up to greet her.

"Don't stand up, I'll sit next to you, I also want to enjoy the fragrance of the flowers." Mu Rong Ji Zi briskly walked and sat beside her, quickly stopped her from standing up.

Now seated, Mu Rong Ji Zi stretched out her arms and her body. "Good, sitting

here feels really comfortable.”

“Oh! Big Sister in law how come you have time to come over here today?”

“I haven’t been able to be alone with you, Sister. I want to have a chat with you.” Mu Rong Ji Zi turned towards Long Mo Er and said, “Well, we usually have some things we cannot talk about with men.”

Long Mo Er replied with a smile. “How can that be? I saw how Big Brother loves you, how can there be words you cannot say towards him?”

“Hey, things regarding female matters, he doesn’t understand. So there’s no point to tell!”

“Then Big Sister in law, if there is something you want to tell, you can come and see me any time!” Long Mo Er thought it would be great for both of them.

“I saw you were pretty busy these days, spending all day with Ye Che, I was afraid of disturbing you. Today is not easy to see Ye Che going out alone so that I hurried to come pay visit” Mu Rong Ji Zi has been waiting to say these words to Long Mo Er. Today, she has finally said them.

“there’s nothing la!” Long Mo Er began blushing.

“Tell me, how are things between you and Ye Che now?” Mu Rong Ji Zi came closer to Long Mo Er with a curious face.

“Just as usual la!” Long Mo Er shyly replied.

“Which is?” Mu Rong Ji Zi asked with a smile.

“Aiya, Big Sister-in-law.”

“Okay, okay, I will stop teasing you, your face is red.” Mu Rong Ji Zi started laughing aloud.

“Everyone is happy that you and Ye Che seem to be getting along very well now.”

Hearing such words, Long Mo Er’s face remained red. She raised her head to look at Mu Rong Ji Zi who was suddenly showing a serious expression.

64

Guys, sorry for the late update.

I was so busy with the “torture” given by my trainee + supervisor.

Well, things will be better and I really happy finally saturday comes and I able to up date my blog ^-^

Please enjoy the translation

translated by Obsidian and edited by Azurro

Chapter 64

A Suggestion to Share the Same Bedroom

“Actually the entire family has been worried about Ye Che all along. The brothers’ temperaments are all very similar. Even though father and mother always have a smile on their faces, their hearts were always uneasy. It’s better now as Ye Che has you by his side. Not only are Father and mother’s faces happy, now both their hearts are very happy.” Mu Rong Ji Zi slowly disclosed this information.

Worried about Ye Che? Even though she didn’t clearly understand what Mu Rong Ji Zi was implying, Long Mo Er guessed that the statement meant that at the beginning Ye Che definitely did not approve of the situation surrounding their marriage. Were father and mother worried that Mo Er and Ye Che’s marriage would be unhappy? If that’s what Mu Rong Ji Zi’s was saying then are father and mother happy because the little changes in Ye Che and her relationship?

“You and Ye Che are now considered husband and wife. You are already completely different from what you two were before. Have you thought about sharing the same bedroom?” Mu Rong Ji Zi’s words were like dropping a bomb.

“Huh? Share the same bedroom?” Long Mo Er couldn’t help herself. Her voice rose somewhat. Her face also naturally became abnormally red.

“Certainly, after all you are husband and wife. You cannot for your entire life let Ye Che sleep in the study room, right? Your relationship has certainly changed!”

“Big Sister-in-law, why are you....” bringing this up? Long Mo Er didn’t say the last few words out loud. Her heart begins to be frenzied.

“Father and mother are no longer young. Consider Father and mother’s impressions about seeing you two sleeping separately! I didn’t want to bring this up but seeing the two elders, I couldn’t stand it anymore.” Mu Rong Ji Zi straight forwardly stared at Long Mo Er waiting for her answer.

“I.....I....” Long Mo Er couldn’t escape from Mu Rong Ji Zi’s stare and couldn’t answer.

How could she answer this sort of matter on the spur-of-the-moment?

A voice came from the courtyard, “Madam, Eldest Young Master has returned. He’s looking for you regarding a matter and had me come over to find you.” It dulled Long Mo Er’s embarrassment.

Mu Rong Ji Zi casually answered, “You go back first. I’ll be there immediately.” She did not plan to actually leave.

“But Eldest Young Master wants you to immediately go over. He said there’s an urgent matter.”

Mu Rong Ji Zi gave a brief glare because of the servants’ timing. She said to Wan Er, “Younger Sister, think carefully about this. I hope you think this through and quickly reach a solution. I have to leave now.”

Mo Er’s expression of being lost in thought allowed Mu Rong Ji Zi to breathe a sigh of relief.

Soon afterward Mu Rong Ji Zi got up, walked to the side of the servant and then went outside. The servant obediently followed in back. They left Mo Er’s courtyard.

“What is elder Young Master’s urgent matter?” Mu Rong Ji Zi hadn’t gotten the result that she wanted. Her tone was rushed.

The servant very carefully replied as Mu Rong Ji Zi’s mood was not good. “Elder Young Master did not mention it.”

“Ye Yu had better have a really good reason otherwise I...” Mu Rong Ji Zi gave a cold humph in her anger.

Mu Rong Ji Zi used a fast pace and quickly returned back to her own house. Her initial glance saw Ye Yu inside, calm and composed, sitting in front of a table, delicately drinking tea.

Mu Rong Ji Zi firmly asked him, “Don’t you have an urgent matter? Why are you sitting here and drinking tea? You’d better have a good explanation.” Mu Rong Ji Zi’s heart though was uneasy as she sat down face to face with him.

“First come and drink a cup of tea!” It was as if Ye Yu didn’t perceive her anger. He slowly poured a cup of tea and passed it to her.

“Don’t you know, I want to immediately hear an answer? Why did you call me back?” Mu Rong Ji Zi’s calmness disappeared as she became angry.

Seeing she didn’t intend to take the offered cup of tea, Ye Yu was forced to put a cup in front of her.

“Hey. Say something, OK?”

“Zi Er, Wan Er and Ye Che’s personal feelings are their own matter. We should not interfere.” Ye Yu spoke unhurriedly.

“Didn’t I say that younger sister Wan Er has a shy personality when they’re together! I’m helping her, reminding her. What’s the matter with that?”

“Zi Er, two people’s feelings are their own personal matter. We should not interfere. It will just mess up a good thing. We talked a lot about this yesterday night. Why don’t you understand? And running over there when I’m gone, I really don’t know what else to say to you.” Ye Yu grabbed her. He didn’t know what to do with her at all.

“I’m just impatient! I want to see everyone in the Ye’s family to be completely happy! You and I are so blessed. I just want everyone to be as happy as we are!” Mu Rong Ji Zi felt somewhat wronged thinking about what was said last night.

Ye Yu lovingly spoke. “You-my little foolish, I understand your heart and know you want everyone in the entire family to be happy. But there are a lot of things that cannot be forced such as matters of the heart! We can only let time allow them to slowly understand their own feelings for each other.” Ye Yu stood up and went to Mu Rong Ji Zi’s side. He used his hand to slowly lift her beautiful, charming face.

Mu Rong Ji Zi buried her face in his waist, closely hugging him. Her small voice said “Sorry!”

“You-my little foolish, How can I blame you? Let everything take its’ course! If fate permits then Che and Wan Er will certainly be blessed.”

“Ok. I’ll listen to you.”



translated by CJ and edited by Azurro

Chapter 65

Inner Struggle

After Mu Rong Ji Zi left Long Mo Er still remains seating there, staring blankly at the sky. Mu Rong Ji Zi's words has made her heart completely confused, she doesn't know what to do.

Become a real couple (by sharing same room and bed)? She didn't know how.

Although she has given her heart to Ye Che unknowingly, not want to admit it...

Although during these time he has been so good to her...

And she is able to taste such happiness from Ye Che...

But, Ye Che has never said he likes her!

What should she do?

She doesn't know what he's thinking or how he feels.

Another thing, she is not really Ye Che's wife.

"Father and Mother were constantly worried about Ye Che. However, it is good he has you by his side."

Did Sister-in-law meant what she said? Long Mo Er tried remembering her exact words.

Just then, Mu Rong Ji Zi's word are becoming clearer, while Long Mo Er's heart became more unsettled and filled with guilt.

She lied to everyone.

With her being like this, will they still love her, protect and like her?

Sister-in-law, why did you choose today to tell me those words? Why did you do that? Sister-in-law has always been friendly so why are you suddenly saying such words towards me?

Long Mo Er's heart has become a mess!

Should she go and call for Ye Che to return?

Dazed, she saw her big sister's pretty face, in her ears she heard a gentle voice.

"You told me before that to pursue my happiness, I need to be courageous. Grab onto yours!"

After saying those words, Sister's pretty face disappeared.

Why is she suddenly hearing her sister's voice?

After that revelation, just what is she implying I should do?

The day slowly turns to night and a faint light started flashing from a distance.

Long Mo Er returned from her deep thought to realize that the sky has turned dark and the grass beneath her has turned damp, even a part of her skirt was wet.

Looking back to the house, Lu Qun also didn't know when the house lights turned on.

All was silent.

Taking a breath, she placed her hands to the ground, she got ready to get up.

Maybe because she sat in the same position for a long time, her body slightly numb, she couldn't stand up straight and started falling backwards. Long Mo Er closed her eyes and prepared herself to fall and hit the ground.

"Can you be more focus while you are walking? Why are you being careless again?" She felt warm arms catch her falling body and heard distress in his voice.

Feeling this familiar scene, Long Mo Er no longer felt nervous. She knew she was safe; he had once saved her the same way. That one morning, he also appeared by her side, holding her body and saying those exact words. Only this time, they include a gentler tone.

Leaning herself against him, Long Mo Er looked Ye Che in the eyes and saw him doting on her.

She began thinking, if he makes eye contact, maybe she can ask if in his heart, he has grown to care for her as she does for him.

"How can you be by yourself in the yard? What about Lu Qun? Has she become

lazy?" asked Ye Che while ignoring the strange look on Long Mo Er's face.

Chapter 66 Weeping and persuading to stay

“Lu Qun, I have asked her to take her leave first.” Long Mo Er is talking behalf of Lu Qun.

Ye Che has stopped to Long Mo Er's lower waist, touching Long Mo Er's hand, he is surprised with the cold temperature of her body.

“How long have you been here, actually? How your hands could be so cold? There is no slightly warm.” Even when he spoke there is little bit reproach but he also hurried to grab her pair of hands, covered it with his own hands, using his palms to warm her pair of cold hands.

“I am fine!” Long Mo Er said.

Why should he treat her so nice?

Why should he care her so much?

Why should he be so gentle and warm towards her?

His acts almost make her wants to cry.

What should she do for him? Could she opens her mouth and ask him to sleep with her in one room?

Whenever she thought about Ye Che who is always sleeping at study room because of her, Long Mo Er wants to cry even more!

“Nothing, I am fine.” Long Mo Er wrapped Ye Che's neck with her hand, the tears that fall down from her eyes are reason of everything Ye Che did for her, at the moment her face has wet by her tears.

Ye Che's face become blur in her vision. She did not know why suddenly she is crying, she did not mean to cry, really! Ye Che hugged her, she should be the one who happy but why she crying instead of showing her happiness? Perhaps because hugged by Ye Che, she felt touching so that her tears just fall down naturally, is it the feel of sweetness? Or is it the feel of sour?

Regarding to whatever Long Mo Er said, he is not listening to her and he keeps on walking heading towards Long Mo Er's room and put her to her bed. He looked at the tear stain which left in Long Mo Er's face, Ye Che anxiously asking: "Are you hurt? Is it still hurt or not? You don't need to lie; I will call the doctor immediately."

After he done with all his questions, he turned his back and prepared to walk to outside.

At this time, Long Mo Er is faster, her hands grabbed Ye Che's hands, it makes Ye Che turned his head to Long Mo Er, looking at one's of his hand that grab by Long Mo Er and then turned his direction to Long Mo Er.

"Is there something you need?"

"Nothing, please just stay here. Is it okay?"

Long Mo Er sounded pitiful, her facial expression also looked sad, Ye Che suddenly feel so bad and anxious.

He sits at the edge of the bed, gently caress her small face, very gentle and trying to persuade her: "I will go to find doctor, will be back as soon as possible, I don't go, be good, okay?"

"I really am fine."

"How about I looking for someone to call the doctor, will it be okay? Very soon I will be back, believe on me, I won't go for long."

Long Mo Er could sense that he is trying to loosen his hand, Long Mo Er anxious, she does not know what to do, she does not understand how could he mistaken her feel unwell, and also she does not know how to explain the situation to him so that he could believe on her that she is doing good, hence, she stood and hugged him.

"Please don't go, please believe me that I am really fine."

"Fine, fine, I won't go." Because of her gestures, Ye Che even thought there must be something happen to Long Mo Er so that she becomes strange, not normal like she used to be. Without any better option, he follows whatever she wants and he hopes that he will be able to comfort her in such way.

“I am so sorry, I really okay, don’t worry about me, don’t spoil and pamper me too much? Or else, I won’t awake or I might not understand what I should do for you in this life time! I am not type of person who easy to cry and weep, but I just not understand myself why I become easy to cry! Please forgive me, I really do not have any intention to lie to anyone! Forgive me! Please forgive me!” Long Mo Er totally mess.

“Alright, alright.” Ye Che pats her back gently as respond to her. He has understood very well

Mostly sick people are very weak. Sometimes the sick is absentminded so that no matter what Long Mo Er said, he just answered her 'alright and fine'.

“Don’t go, please don’t leave me.”

“Alright.”

When he sees that Long Mo Er has become calms little bit and not make any movement, Ye Che gently put Long Mo Er who almost fall asleep to bed from his hug, slowly and carefully put her into her bed. “Be good and sleep. I won’t go anywhere.”

Long Mo Er nods, she grip tightly Ye Che hands and won’t let him go. Ye Che hands spreading warmth, it makes her even relieved and ease her to sleep.

“I really don’t know how to act in front of you?” Ye Che said softly.

translated by CJ and edited by Azurro

Chapter 67: An Embarrassing Morning

The following morning's first light shone warmly in the serene room, on the bed were two figures that seemed so comfortable.

After some time, Long Mo Er opened her eyes.

She has not slept so well in a long time, last night she was so at ease, felt warm, she didn't even know when she fell asleep.

Long Mo Er felt a slight movement next to her and realized that someone was lying beside her. She turned her head cautiously and saw Ye Che's sleeping face so close to hers that she can clearly see his long eye lashes.

"This must be an illusion, there's no way Ye Che would sleep beside her." Long Mo Er closed her eyes thinking that when she opens them again the illusion would be gone.

But as soon as she opened her eyes, she saw his beautiful face, his long eye lashes, his upright nose, and that rosy mouth of his...

She can clearly see his familiar face.

Startled by what she saw, Long Mo Er sat up and screamed loudly, "Ah!"

Ye Che, who was sleeping, heard her and woke up. Seeing Long Mo Er's panic-filled face, Ye Che immediately assessed what was going on.

"Don't shout. It's me. It's fine." Ye Che quickly covered Long Mo Er's mouth with his hand.

"Don't shout! Otherwise, you'll call everyone here and they will see and you realize what that means?" Ye Che reminded her.

"I." Long Mo Er's head nodded, bewildered and embarrassed.

"Now, I will let go."

After composing herself, Long Mo Er looked at Ye Che with panic and started backing away. "How did you... How can you be in my bed?"

"Watch out!" Seeing Long Mo Er back away and about to fall from the bed, Ye

Che threw his arms around his waist and pulled her towards him.

“It’s a little confusing! Hey! You... How can you be here?” Long Mo Er stuttered as she observed that they are still in bed and his face is so close.

“Mo Er, I wasn’t planning on staying yesterday, but a certain someone was holding on to my hand and was begging me not to go!”

Ye Che observed that Long Mo Er has stopped struggling against him, settled himself with her in his arms and looked directly at her.

“Oh?” Hearing Ye Che’s words, Long Mo Er began to remember.

“As someone was grabbing my hand, I certainly couldn’t go. I had to wait until that someone was asleep before trying to loosen the hand but still that someone won’t let go. I had no choice but to sleep here.” Ye Che said with a laugh. He obviously is in a good mood.

Hearing his words, Long Mo Er’s memory returned completely and realized what happened. “My God! No way! How could I have done that?” Long Mo Er shyly covered her face with her hands. She feels so embarrassed that she couldn’t look at him.

“How could I have been so bold?” Long Mo Er asked with much chagrin.



Chapter 68

Losing Chance for Intimate Act

The shy expression of Long Mo Er looks so lovely, it makes Ye Che speechless. Silently he is looking at her, admiring her. He teases her, makes her shy and because of it, he even happier and laugh only by doing this kind of action. Before, he never thought that teasing other people is such fun. Having her, he couldn't control himself for not teasing her. When Ye Che realized how immature his action, he breaks into laughter.

When Long Mo Er heard his laughing sound, she puts down her hands, looking at him, feeling very embarrassed, she said: "You are not allowed to laugh at me."

While Ye Che not even takes her words, he feels so happy, looking at her.

"You don't laugh at me, you laugh, if you laugh, I will ignore you." Long Mo Er is helpless to say that words. She really didn't understand herself, how could she do such action? How could she be so audacious for asking Ye Che to stay with her? Oh Heaven!

"Ignore me?" Ye Che stopped to laugh but there still a trace of his smiling face. "Ah, what a pity, I even want to say, it will be so good if there is someone who

want to accompany me sleep every night, I never slept this comfortable before! If you ignore me, it better for me to take back what I said!”

“Are you serious?” Long Mo Er is stuffed with Ye Che’s words, she is impatience asking him, her eyes looked into Ye Che’s face, waiting him to stop laughing.

She really wants to know Ye Che’s feeling, would his feeling be same or not with hers, if there is same, does it means Ye Che likes her? Could it be explain little bit, Ye Che perhaps love her? She really wants to know about it.

“Are you really wants to know?” Ye Che looking at Long Mo Er’s twinkling eyes, looking her frowning expression, looking at her delicate, tender and beautiful pinkish lips.....

Ye Che’s eyes are starting to look more detail, he closely seeing at Long Mo Er, slowly he lower his head.

Being looked with ardent eyes, Long Mo Er feels her head white blank, she could not think of anything.

Silently and slowly she closed her pair of eyes, nervous, her heart thumping, she could feel the warmness of Ye Che’s breath, his warm breath slowly by slowly closer to her face, she completely stopped for this moment.

Right the moment, Ye Che almost touch Long Mo Er’s lips, so close, door suddenly being opened “Peng” a sound of the door being pushed, it surprised Ye Che who suddenly raised his head up, looking at the door direction.

“Miss, that Na Yan Young Master is looking at Third Young Master.” Lu Qun’s voice pierced into that two people ears. “But, Third Young Master is missing, and Na Yan Young Master asking me to come here to find you, and now, he is on the way coming here with Big Young Master and Big Young Madam.”

“Ah!” when she heard what Lu Qun said, Long Mo Er panicking and opened wide her eyes, realizing that she still in bed, she even sat on Ye Che lap and embrace by him, suddenly she released herself from Ye Che and makes distance, jumping from bed, panicking stand up from bed.

What should I do? How could I forget the habit of Lu Qun who likes to barge into my room? What would Lu Qun thinks when she spotted Ye Che is still sitting

in her bed? What should I do? Ah~ Lu Qun said that Big Brother Na Yan, Big Brother, and Big Sister in Law are heading here? if being seen by them, what would they say? Long Mo Er goes pale because of panic.

When she feels her hand being hold, Long Mo Er turns her head, she sees Ye Che has already standing beside her, looking at her with warm eyes, so that she could feel little bit at ease and peace, as if said, "Don't be afraid, I am here."

With this kind of eyes sight, Long Mo Er feels more peaceful and not panic anymore. Her feeling and mood become calmer. She does not need to worry too much, because she believes in Ye Che. He will settle everything.



Chapter 69

A VIP at the Ye Household

Halted! “Third Young Master, Third Young Master you were here?” Lu Qun was surprised to see Ye Che standing beside Long Mo Er. Her eyes wandered and saw their hands entwined, her Miss noticed her looking eyes and stood up.

“I got up early and decided to come see her.” Ye Che said with indifference.

Hearing Ye Che’s answer Long Mo Er could not understand why her heart felt uncomfortable. Ye Che said those words to protect her but why do those words make her feel sad?

“Sister Wan Er, I came to see you! Sister Wan Er? Are you up yet?” Gu Na Yan’s voice could be heard throughout the house.

Hearing the excitement in Gu Na Yan’s voice made Ye Che frown slightly, he inched closer to Long Mo Er and whispered to her ear, “Mo Er, don’t let him get too close or better yet, don’t speak to him. Understand?” Ye Che did not want a repeat of what went on between Gu Na Yan and Long Mo Er at the lake. Ye Che wanted to hit Gu Na Yan for the first time. It was too early in the morning to be looking for Mo Er; now Gu Na Yan has dampened the intimate moment he and Mo Er was having.

“Ah?” Long Mo Er did not understand the meaning of what Ye Che said. *Did the “he” Ye Che was referring to Big Brother Na Yan? Don’t allow him to be close and ignore him? Wasn’t he and Ye Che close? Ye Che wants her to be mean. But, why? They’ve grown to become good friends, haven’t they? Did they have an argument lately?*

“Let’s go and see what he wants.” Ye Che became very depressed at Mo Er’s enthusiasm over Gu Na Yan. Ye Che’s face felt and looked very uncomfortable as he took Long Mo Er’s hand to walk with her to the outbuildings; He didn’t give her any opportunity to ask questions.

“Sister Wan Er, I haven’t seen you for just a few days yet you’ve grown more

and more beautiful. This brother has missed you so!” Gu Na Yan said as Long Mo Er entered the room completely ignoring Ye Che and opened his arms to give her a hug.

Seeing that Gu Na Yan was about to give Long Mo Er a hug, he quickly pulled her closer and Gu Na Yan’s arms fell on empty air.

Puzzled, Long Mo Er looked up to see Ye Che’s beautiful chin and his arms around her.

Mu Rong Ji Zi who came along with Ye Yu, saw Ye Che’s actions towards Gu Na Yan, smiled at each other. As if speaking with her eyes, he said, *“It seems you’re right. Ye Che really likes Wan Er.”*

“Che, what do you think you’re doing?” Gu Na Yan asked while looking at Ye Che.

“Don’t touch her.” Ye Che said in a small voice but everyone heard.

“Che, you’re so stingy!” “Ye Che, what are you saying? How can you be so rude to Big Brother Na Yan?” Gu Na Yan and Long Mo Er’s voices rang.

Ye Yu and Mu Rong Ji Zi looked at the scene as if watching a play; they were staying in the sidelines, not intending to join the debate.

“What are you even doing here?” Ye Che ignored their questions and looked with annoyance at Gu Na Yan.

“I’m ignoring you. I don’t want to talk to you right now.” Gu Na Yan said bluntly.

“Big Brother Na Yan, Ye Che didn’t get to rest well last night that’s why he’s grumpy. Don’t be mad at him, Okay?” Long Mo Er worriedly said to Gu Na Yan. Long Mo Er doesn’t know why Ye Che’s temper is acting up but she can’t ignore Big Brother Na Yan just because Ye Che’s having a fit. After all, it isn’t worth it for Ye Che to lose Big Brother Na Yan who was such a good friend.

Chapter 70

See through Ye Ruo Xuan

“Didn’t have a good sleep yesterday? How could Sister Wan Er knows it?” Mu Rong Ji Zi couldn’t help herself to ask after she heard Long Mo Er, so she asked her directly.

It just happen that she and Ye Yan went to study room to find Ye Che, the bed inside the study room was still so tidy, untouchable and alike yesterday. It appears that Ye Che wasn’t sleep at study room last night. And now, Ye Che happen to pop out in here, moreover Wan Er has spoken so warmly. Did Wan Er really do as what she said before, asking Ye Che to sleep at her room?

“ah! This.....” Long Mo Er doesn’t know how to answer when she is being asked.

“Big sister in law, yesterday I had checked the account book, feeling little bit dizzy, of course I didn’t have enough rest!” said Ye Che.

“Oh, so that why!” seeing from their reaction, of course Mu Rong Ji Zi not easy believes on both of them. But, she remembered what Ye Yan has told her before. Feeling is about two people matters, the outsider could not intervene. If she is trying to expose their lies, it would only ruin all the good things.

“Sister Ruo Xuan, why you also come this early?” since only Long Mo Er and Ye Che who are facing at the front door, while Ye Che is busy dealing with Mu Rong Ji Zi, it only Long Mo Er who realized others figure outside the door.

“Big Brother, Big sister in law, Third brother, Third sister in law, I heard that Big brother Na Yan is also coming, so that I come to see.” There is slightly pinkish in Ye Ruo Xuan’s face. She is walking inside the room, awkwardly standing beside Long Mo Er.

“Ruo Xuan, it has been a while, you are still so beautiful!” Gu Na Yan always be

smooth-talker with everyone he meets.

“Brother Na Yan stops joking!”

“Ye Che, this is the first time there are many of people coming into my place, so crowded!” Long Mo Er smiles, her face showed how happy she is to Ye Che who is standing beside her.

“Sister Wan Er, if you really like this atmosphere, in the future I will frequently coming to visit you!” said Gu Na Yan.

“It’s good to hear!” Replied Long Mo Er happily.

This time, Ye Che seems not have any objection to see Gu Na Yan get closer to Long Mo Er, if Gu Na Yan really able to make Long Mo Er smile this happy, Ye Che feels so happy too! Only by seeing her smiling and happiness expression, it more than enough satisfied his feeling.

“He he he, everyone has got up so early, still hasn’t eat breakfast! Let’s walk to the big hall, I will ask butler Jiang to prepare food, everyone sits to have chat. Don’t just stand here! Na Yan tell us what was interesting things happen this time when you were travelled, let’s us to hear.” Mu Rong Ji Zi smiled.

“Hm, everyone hasn’t breakfast, let’s us have the breakfast together!” Ye Yan said.

“Really match, wife sings and followed by husband! Big brother and big sister in law are really lovely!” Gu Na Yan said.

“So what? Are you jealous? Why don’t you find someone you loved and then you would be able like us!” Mu Rong Ji Zi uses her elbow to poke Gu Na Yan’s chest.

“Brother Na Yan, are you okay?” Seeing how serious Mu Rong Ji Zi pokes Gu Na Yan, Ye Ruo Xuan worries asked.

Could not resist, Mu Rong Ji Zi said: “Aiya! Ruo Xuan, you rest assured, he won’t die.”

“O.” Ye Ruo Xuan realized that she had responded too exaggerate, feeling embarrassed, she lower her head.

Long Mo Er sees how that little girl act, she audacious make a guess that Ruo

Xuan likes Gu Na Yan.

After she makes conclusion on her heart, Long Mo Er feels so much excited, she wants to ask Ye Che to confirm but she knows this atmosphere, this place and the moment isn't in right time. She will let the nature take its course, and taking this opportunity to observe more about Ye Ruo Xuan and Gu Na Yan.

71

Translate by CJ
Edited by Azurro

Chapter 71

Playing Matchmaker

Ye Che unintentionally ended up going to Long Mo Er's courtyard with Long Mo Er tailing behind him.

At this time, Long Mo Er cannot help but pull at Ye Che's sleeves to stop him.

Ye Che feeling the tug at his sleeves, stopped, without understanding her excitement, he looked towards Long Mo Er's face.

"Hey, I asked you a question!" Paying attention that they were already ahead a short distance from the others and their actions unnoticed, Long Mo Er asked him in a low voice, "Does Ruo Xuan Mei Mei like Na Yan GeGe yah?"

Ye Che raised his eyebrow and listened quietly.

He did not expect what she just said, nor did he think about it! Still intently observing and deducing that 'Ruo Xuan likes Na Yan', it means she's been only focusing on him, he thought she was spacing out! She's describing things in this way, is he special in her heart? Suddenly aware of their strange ideas, Ye Che was amused.

"Did you hear anything I said?" Long Mo Er asked.

"Ruo Xuan Mei Mei likes Na Yan, How did you know?" As long as she puts her heart into it, her powers of observation are not bad.

"That's what I said, it's just an intuition!" Long Mo Er said with excitement. Her intuitions are usually accurate!

"Why are you asking?"

Seeing her expression, Ye Che wondered about her motivation.

"Does Na Yan Ge Ge like Ruo Xuan Mei Mei?"

"Na Yan didn't say, I don't know." Ye Che honestly said.

"Then how about we help Ruo Xuan Mei Mei to find out what Na Yan Ge Ge

thinks of her? If Na Yan Ge Ge likes Ruo Xuan Mei Mei, isn't that very good? They can be together." Long Mo Er looked expectantly at Ye Che for an answer.

"Probe Na Yan?" With their matters left unresolved, she still wants to meddle in someone else's matter.

"Aiyah! How about it? They seem to match each other well!"

Matchmake Ruo Xuan and Na Yan? Only she can think about it! Nobody else would do it! She's not concerned for her own but for other people's affairs. Their problem is still unresolved, although the situation is a little better than before, but she can't expect their relationship to stay like this! Had she even thought about that?

"You'd better let them mind their own business!" Ye Che unhappily said.

He saw a couple of people heading towards them, Ye Che left her and went ahead.

"Hey, I asked you a question. Why are you ignoring me? 'Take care of it myself' what does that mean ya? You think about it, you and I are really..."

Somewhat Long Mo Er doesn't understand YeChe, one second he's happy the next, he puts on that stern expression. His moods are still impervious to her.

What kind of man is Ye Che really? Long Mo Er watched as Ye Che's tall back and as if in a trance. Why can he be gentle in a moment yet also be difficult to approach? Which is the real Ye Che? Is the real Ye Che still so distant from her?

"Wan Er Me iMei, come on, what are you standing there? Hurry and come here a!" Gu Na Yan called from a distance.

"Oh! Good, I'll be right there."

Chapter 72

Long Mo Er Stubbornness

Long Mo Er is the last person who walking into Hall, the others have already sat down. As far as the eye can see, the seat that obviously emptied beside Ye Che is actually a place for her to sit, because usually she sits beside Ye Che.

But, at this moment she does not have any mood to sit beside Ye Che.

During her days hang out with the Ye's, she knows all the Ye's, such as Big Sister in law and sister Ruo Xuan, she has good understanding of them. At the time she thought she has understood about Ye Che, she just realized actually she does not know anything about him, at the time when they were walking at corridor, his acts still mysteriously changed, unable to guess.

There is kind of pressure to urge her, not to sit beside Ye Che.

She avoids Ye Che's side and walking toward Gu Na Yan's side, sweetly said: "Na Yan Ge Ge, I want to sit with you, can I?"

"Sister Wan Er wants to sit with me, I am too happy! Come and sit!" Gu Na Yan surprisingly stands up, very content to pull the chair for her to sit.

At the moment when Long Mo Er sat down, Long Mo Er could feel all people eyes are looked at her.

Included, there still strong glare because of her movement, ferociously pierce to her clothes, burned hot into her skin.

She made guess, that should be Ye Che's strong glare! Others people won't show that kind of strong glare towards her.

At this time, she lower her head, not dare to look at him, secretly in hale deep breath, and then very naturally lift up her head, her face shows brilliant smile. She looks at Gu Na Yan's side, she happily talking with Gu Na Yan.

She does not think others will feel weird seeing her. But, the moment Ye Che answered to her, he wasn't in good mood which makes her uncomfortable. Even when she uses lovely and soft tone asked him.

If what she did call as stubborn, then let her to be stubborn for this time! She does not want to compromise Ye Che every time. To think about it, every time always Ye Che, the person who is angry without reason, while she is the person who always asking for forgiveness, just because she afraid being ignored by Ye Che.

This just, she is not alike herself anymore, does this because she loves him?

Love, should it make harder for oneself?

"Comes out with me." not long after that, when Long mo Er stills talking happily with Gu Na Yan, Ye Che stood up and walked to Long Mo Er in front, very fast raised her hand, thought to drag her to outside.

Long Mo Er does not know, what is happening, she sees Ye Che unhappy expression, asking him: "what do you want? Ye Che, what do you want? Wei!"

Ye Che ignoring her completely, her hand hurt because being pulled, the pain makes her feel scared.

She turned her back, looking at Gu Na Yan who is the nearest to her, shout: "Na Yan Ge Ge, Na Yan Ge Ge. I don't want to go out! Na Yan Ge Ge."

After he heard Long Mo Er begging for Gu Na Yan help, Ye Che fasten his steps.

73

Guys I heard you

I will finish Being Love Exclusively within this month and focusing to the others two (substitute bride and husband is great black belly) as for Love and Price tag, I can't rush because all depend on Thunder.

Translated by CJ

Edited by Azurro

Chapter 73

Second Kiss

“Ye Che, you let go! What do you want?” Long Mo Er tried hard to free herself from his grasp. “I want to go and eat dinner with everybody, I don’t want to go out! What are you trying to do?”

Ye Che heard what she said but simply didn’t pay attention. He only wanted to separate Long Mo Er from Gu Na yan’s side. By passing a corridor, Ye Che dragged Long Mo Er back to the house they left.

Once they came into the room, Ye Che closed the door and his steps faltered. He turned towards Long Mo Er and looked behind her. Although no one was in sight, Ye Che continued to hold on to Long Mo Er’s hand with no thoughts of letting go.

“What do you want?” This is the first time Long Mo Er looked straight at Ye Che, forgetting a bit of the pain and stepped back.

“Didn’t you just say you were going to help Ruo Xuan and Gu Na Yan? How? The next moment you go ahead laughing at all of Gu Na Yan’s words. In fact, you really like Gu Na Yan don’t you? What you said at the porch about Gu Na yan and Ruo Xuan and about you and me, it’s all a joke isn’t it?” Ye Che said Gu Na Yan’s name three times and with such stress. Now, he doesn’t want to see Gu Na Yan... This is the first time he felt such deep dislike for Gu Na Yan.

“I didn’t. I didn’t deceive you.” Long Mo Er couldn’t stand his inexplicable behavior and argued. “I asked you to help me. It’s you who didn’t want to. How come you’re blaming me now? I just like Na Yan Ge Ge so what?”

Long Mo Er felt injustice yet was surprised when Ye Che’s lips fell on hers heavily. Long Mo Er’s body met Ye Che’s body which approached her with such force her back hit the wooden carved doors.

What did she do to come across this circumstances?

Why was he treating her this way? Long Mo Er opened her eyes widely.

This kiss is different from the last one. Ye Che's kiss is both urgent and fierce, completely hurting Long Mo Er. Long Mo Er doesn't know what's going on, as if a sharp knife is piercing through her heart filling her with so much pain making her tears fall silently.

Falling down Long Mo Er's face, the tears traced the path to her mouth. Ye Che's lips on Long Mo Er's, tasted something salty, a taste that should not be there.

That taste woke Ye Che up, he slowly recovered and looked up. He saw tears continuously falling from Long Mo Er's eyes. Ye Che immediately realized what the flavor he tasted was from.

"I'm sorry I'm sorry Mo Er. I also don't know why I'm acting this way. Please don't cry. I'm sorry." Ye Che immediately felt regret and tenderness in his heart. He wrapped Long Mo Er in a warm embrace.

What's going on with him? He clearly knows that Mo Er loves him... Why does he continue to misunderstand her and Na Yan? From the time they began living together, Mo Er has been simple. Everybody knows that. How could he have considered that she...

How did he end up hurting her again?

This morning painted such a warm and happy picture, how did everything turn out like this?

What was he doing just now?!

How can this foolish girl easily affect his heart!

Chapter 74

Kissed

“Ugh!! Ye Che... you are...so...scary!” Long Mo Er body is trembling in Ye Che embrace.

“Long Mo Er, don’t be afraid. I would not do like that again, don’t afraid me!” Ye Che comforted Long Mo Er. “Don’t be afraid of me, I knew, I should not do that, I have regretted. Mo Er, don’t afraid me, do you? I was angry because I saw you talking happily with Gu Na Yan, don’t afraid me.”

Ye Che is enveloped by Long Mo Er’s fear, he does not want to see Long Mo Er afraid him! His real intention not like this!

But, why it happened?

How could he frighten Long Mo Er?

Would Long Mo Er hate him for what have he done?”

Thought about it, Ye Che hugs Long Mo Er tightly; over and over, softly tell her “sorry”, avoiding to scares Long Mo Er once again.

After Long Mo Er heard Ye Che warm voice, she only silently shed her tears in his embrace.

There is countless changed of feeling when loves someone which is really something! She has already felt deep to the point she not recognized herself. What should she do to make her feeling and Ye Che get closer to each others?

“Ye Che?”

After long time, Ye Che has talked as if his saliva dried, he still thought Long Mo Er would not forgive him, the voice stirring up Ye Che emotions.

“What? Mo Er?” Ye Che loosen up his embrace, letting Long Mo Er lift her

head up.

“Ye Che, are you still mad?” Long Mo Er looked at Ye Che eyes which have showed little bit worry.

“I am not angry anymore.” Ye Che eyes showed love expression.

“Why were you angry? This morning when I said about match-making between Gu Na Yan Ge Ge and Ruo Xuan Mei Mei, why were you angry? Why are you always angry? Don’t you know, when you are angry, I feel afraid, I feel worry!” Long Mo Er feels pressured, after she said at last she still shedding tears

“Mo Er, sorry, I won’t be like that in the future. Don’t be worry, don’t afraid me, I won’t do it anymore.” Ye Che wipes Long Mo Er’s tears, he swears!

“Really? Not angry anymore? Long Mo Er seems not really sure.

“Really.”

“Why are you suddenly get angry?” Long Mo Er is asking him.

“Nothing!” Ye Che could not tell her, his anger is cause of... he is jealous with Gu Na Yan, but he as man how could he tell her.

“Nothing? Why don’t you tell me?”

“Your words, too much!” looking at Long Mo Er chatters, Ye Che kissed her.

Long Mo Er dumbfounded with Ye Che sudden kiss, because she still lingering fear with rough kiss.

But, this time Ye Che is so warm, soft.

She unconsciously closed her eyes.

Chapter 75

Lighting Incenses at Wan Nian Temple

Part 1 (One)

Translated by CJ

Edited by Azurro

The distant sound of horse hooves gradually became closer until the horse carriage stopped in front of the Ye Mansion's gate.

At this time, a crowd of people gathered in front of the carriage. Almost everyone was there in the crowd. Even the head of the Ye Household was with them at the gate. Servants in twos and threes were going to and from the Ye Mansion loading things on the last carriage.

Long Mo Er stood beside Ye Che and looked at the neat line-up of the carriages and onto the people who were hurriedly moving things. She looked at Ye Che's charming face, in her heart she felt a faint uneasiness.

In fact, today isn't a show of grandeur nor is it that someone will be visiting a relative. Rather, this is the day that all the women from the Ye Household will go up to Wan Nian Temple to light incense. Before, each year at this time, Ye Furen together with Mu Rong Ji Zi and Ruo Xuan would go to light incense to pray for security, blessings and peace of the household, for everyone to be healthy, and for the thriving and prosperous business of the Ye Family.

Only, this year Long Mo Er came.

"Well, Wan Er... Let's get going!" Ye Furen said and then turned to Ye Peng to say a few words. After that, Ye Furen stretched her hand so the man-servant can support her as she got on the carriage.

Soon after, Ye Ruo Xuan said her greeting to Ye Peng and then also got on the

carriage.

“Come on, Wan Er. Let’s get going!” Mu Rong Ji Zi said with a smile.

“Yes... Fine.” she replied without thinking, her heart felt uneasy.

In fact, she was surprised with how she was feeling thinking about being separated from Ye Che. Now, when she doesn’t see Ye Che for a moment, it was like the heavens were angry. She was now completely dependent on Ye Che, she seems to have developed a psychological disposition. It seems if Ye Che was not where she is, it became hard to breathe.

They haven’t set out yet and she was already feeling this way, how much more will she feel spending a night at Wan Nian Temple? That meant spending two days without Ye Che! This time would be unbearable! Could she possibly not go? She thought carefully what to say so she wouldn’t have to go. If she threw a tantrum, would they let him go together with them?

But that does not follow the Ye Household’s protocols. She could only say that in her mind and not out loud. She glanced at Ye Che reluctant to leave him, he also looked at her. Then Long Mo Er walked towards the carriage not looking at him.

Just then, Mu Rong Ji Zi smiled, nodded her head, and prepared to get on the carriage.

Lu Qun looked at Long Mo Er’s action, and right away came over to assist her.

“Hold on.”

Ye Che’s voice called, letting all people to turn their heads, everyone looked at him confused, Ye Furen and Ye Ruo Xuan also lifted up the carriage curtain to look towards Ye Che.

“What happened? Is there something else?” Mu Rong Ji Zi suspiciously asked.

Even knowing that everyone was looking at him, Ye Che nevertheless kept his attention on Long Mo Er and said, “Be careful on the way. Take good care of yourself.”

Hearing such words from Ye Che, everyone was either giggling or smiling. They were simple words but Long Mo Er wondered why her face felt hot. She realized

that Ye Che's words were solely for her.

“Well, I'll be there! I will make sure to protect Wan Er. I'll bring her back without a strand of hair missing. This way, you'd be rest assured!! Definitely a wife is different! In the past we'd be gone for ten days to half a month and you didn't even say half the sweet words you said just now. Moreover, we're coming back tomorrow night! Okay, don't worry! If we keep dilly-dallying, I won't be able to guarantee that we'll be back on time tomorrow!” Mu Rong Ji Zi said poking fun at Ye Che.

Chapter 76

Lighting Incenses at Wan Nian Temple

Part 2 (Two)

Translated by CJ

Edited by Azurro

After getting on the horse carriage, Long Mo Er's heart was beating a little fast.

What was going on with her?

Earlier, wasn't she feeling uneasy to be separated from Ye Che? But, the simple words that Ye Che uttered just now had already comforted her. One evening might pass by quickly. But, now she was completely flustered.

Why is this happening? What exactly is going on? Long Mo Er was having a bad feeling that she frowned slightly.

"Wan Er, what's wrong? You don't want to part with Ye Che that much?" Mu Rong Ji Zi who was seated beside her laughed thinking that she was frowning because she is being separated from Ye Che for a short while.

"No, Sister-in-law." Long Mo Er embarrassingly smiled not intending to tell Mu Rong Ji Zi her concerns.

"Wan Er, since you arrived Ye Che has changed immensely. Before, he was so stingy with words. We're all happy you were the one who came to Ye Household rather than somebody else. You make us love you dearly."

"Sister-in-law." Long Mo Er did not expect Mu Rong Ji Zi to say such words, making her feel deeply touched. Her tears were fogging her eyes as she hugged Mu Rong Ji Zi's hand and leaned against her.

“What’s wrong? Did I do something? You’re crying so much if Mother and Ruo Xuan sees us, they might think I was bullying you and make report to Ye Che. Then, I won’t have good days ahead.” Mu Rong Ji Zi placed her hand over Long Mo Er’s gently.

“Sister-in-law, aside from my older sister, you understand me so much! It is good that I have you!”

“Older sister?”

“No... That’s not what I said, I said my younger sister. Sister-in-law must have heard wrong.” Long Mo Er hurriedly explained.

“You definitely said *older sister*. Are you saying my hearing is bad? ” MuRong Ji Zi argued.

Long Mo Er didn’t know what explanation to give. *Is her real identity going to be revealed today? Then what should she do? This wasn’t the time or place to be flustered.* Long Mo Er suddenly became rigid and her blood ran cold.

Lu Qun was seated on the side feeling moved from watching the harmonious interaction between Big Young Mistress and her Miss. But that didn’t last long, her clumsy Miss had ruined the good atmosphere and made such an error. *How will this end?*

Her Miss had already been doing great. She was also happy. But how can she....

This time, what should be done?

Will they be sent back to Long Household? Lu Qun also felt her body grow cold.

“Wan Er, what’s wrong? That was just a simple mistake. I’m not laughing at you. Why are you and Lu Qun very tense? If Mother really sees us, she really would think I am bullying you. Little Miss, you really are a sensitive person. In the future, I would joke less with you. Ye Che treasures you so much. If I’m not careful in teasing you, Ye Che would probably kill me.” Mu Rong Ji Zi didn’t care about their unnatural reactions and continued to joke.

Hearing that Mu Rong Ji Zi have not in the least began to doubt them, Long Mo

Er and Lu Qun began to relax. Their hearts that were on their throats, at that moment, came down.

Will she have to continue living in such fear forever?

It would have been good if she really was Long Wan Er! If so, will she be at ease staying by Ye Che's side? Will she ever be comfortable living at the Ye Household?

Because of their recent exchange, the problems that Long Mo Er had somehow forgotten had once again appeared in her mind.

Chapter 77

Lighting Incenses at Wan Nian Temple

Part 3 (Three)

Translated by CJ

Edited by Azurro

After several hours of bumpy ride, the horse carriage finally stopped.

And now, Long Mo Er was feeling a bit dizzy. This was her first time to sit on a carriage for a long time, her whole body was aching. Lu Qun was no better. This was also her first time sitting on a carriage for a long time. She was also a bit dizzy, her body didn't feel well.

“It turns out going through the second gate was so tiring! I used to play at a place not far from home and all day long I'll be bouncing and frolicking but I never felt this tired. How come I'm tired from riding? Sister-in-law, I really don't feel good.” Long Mo Er didn't understand where Mu Rong Ji Zi's strength was coming from, she did not look tired at all.

“Wan Er, since this is your first time, you might not be accustomed to it yet. I was also like that in the beginning but since we do this frequently, I got used to it. We're here. Get off. You'll feel better once you've rested. This side of Wan Nian Temple is peaceful, the scenery is not bad. You can have a stroll.

Mu Rong Ji Zi lifted the curtain and stepped down first.

Looking ahead onto the other carriage, she caught a glimpse of Ye Furen getting off followed by Ruo Xuan who smiled and looked at her.

“Wan Er, come down! Let's go take a rest.” Mu Rong Ji Zi said lending a hand to Long Mo Er, helping her get off the carriage.

Lu Qun subsequently followed, leaning out of the carriage she saw Mu Rong Ji Zi holding out a hand as if willing to help her out.

Lu Qun looked at her hands, somewhat feeling scared. She didn't know why Mu Rong Ji Zi was standing there.

"Are you not planning to get off?" Mu Rong Ji Zi looked at Lu Qun as she asked her.

"Oh." Lu Qun softly spoke and instinctively reached out her hand to Mu Rong Ji Zi. Mu Rong Ji Zi held her hand as she got off the carriage. After she safely got down, Mu Rong Ji Zi smiled at her and then headed towards Ye Furen.

"Miss, Big Young Mistress is a good person." Lu Qun's innermost being was touched by Mu Rong Ji Zi's action. She was so moved that her eyes were tearing up. She stood beside Long Mo Er as she said those words in a whisper.

She was a servant that came over from the Long Household. To the people at Ye Household and to outsiders, she will always only be a servant girl. But the Big Young Mistress was not occupied by their social ranks and treated her really well. Besides her Miss and the Big Young Mistress, who else will treat her well? How can she not be excited?

"Of course she is!" Long Mo Er looked around and caught Lu Qun's twinkling eyes, Mu Rong Ji Zi's busy silhouette in between the carriages. Long Mo Er stood silently beside Lu Qun.

"Let's go!" Long Mo Er stopped looking around and held onto Lu Qun's arm.

"Yes, we'll go Miss. I already feel better after getting off."

Walking a few steps going up, the open space turned into rows and rows of big buildings. Above the red wooden door hanged a board with a bold and vigorous writing were the characters 'Wan Nian Temple.' Occasionally, a gentle wind blows and one would be able to smell a faint scent of sandalwood.

Just then, people dressed in monk's robes came out of the temple. Among them, one walked ahead. His presence made people feel that he has great wisdom and knowledge like a senior monk. Long Mo Er could not stop herself from staring at him.

“Ye Furen, how are you? You came.” The senior monk spoke.

“Buddhist master, have you been well?” Ye Furen responded.

So he is the senior monk, it's no wonder why he seems mysterious. Long Mo Er thought.

“Not bad. All thanks to Ye Furen’s concern. Please come inside.”

Chapter 78

A Sincere Prayer

Translated by CJ

Edited by Azurro

Immediately afterwards, they had temple food and a bit of time to rest, then the Buddhist master led them down, Long Mo Er together with a group of people arrived at Wan Nian Temple's main hall.

Perhaps because Wan Nian Temple was quite old, or perhaps the Buddha at Wan Nian Temple was very efficacious, or maybe the time is auspicious...

At this moment, the temple was filled with a lot of people, everyone sincerely lighting incense sticks to pray.

“Third Sister-in-law, Wan Nian Temple's Buddha is very efficacious, In a moment Third Sister-in-law will be able to sincerely and earnestly make a request. So long as you pray with sincerity, you'll be able to achieve your wish.” The always clever Ye Ruo Xuan quite uncharacteristically nudged Long Mo Er's arm, her face bore a mischievous expression.

“Oh? Is that so? Then, you had a wish granted before?” Long Mo Er curiously asked.

“Yes, my wish was granted. It was really great! This time I'm going to pray for something else.” Ruo Xuan's eyes held a certain firmness.

“A different wish? How about you tell me?” This was the first time Ruo Xuan was acting this way and she made Long Mo Er was really filled with curiosity.

“I can't! Then it won't come true!”

Ruo Xuan's face got a little bit red as she said those words. Afterwards, as if

feeling uncomfortable, she avoided looking at Long Mo Er's eyes and followed after Ye Furen.

Today, Ruo Xuan seems a little different? Praying for something else? Could it perhaps have something to do with Big Brother Na Yan? Long Mo Er paused and looked at Ye Ruo Xuan from the back, smiled and followed after her looking around at the same time.

As she stepped into the hall, she saw the dazzling Buddha statue in the center of the hall. It had a calm expression that all at once, it gave people a sense of comfort. With the fragrance of sandalwood in the air, people felt more at peace! Looking around, each person had a different appearance but they looked as if they had left behind their humanly desires and have attained enlightenment. Giving a solemn, serious feeling.

On the left is a big open space with a lot of mats. Long Mo Er thought those must be what the small Buddhist monks use when they recite the Buddhist scripture every day!

In front of the Buddha statue, there are mats lying. At this time, in front of the Buddha were a man and a woman praying for something.

"Ye Furen, there is relatively more people today, you might have to wait a small while." The monk expressed his apology towards Ye Furen.

"Great Master, you are too polite. We are not in a rush. When more people come to Wan Nian Temple to light incenses, the temple will flourish more. Besides there were originally a lot of people that used to come here" Ye Furen replied humbly.

"Yes. Our merciful Buddha continues to give guidance to more and more people." The Abbot replied.

After the pair of man and woman finished kneeling and worshiping in front of the Buddha, Ye Furen walked forward. A small Buddhist monk also fetched a lighted incense stick and handed it to Ye Furen. Mu Rong Ji Zi also received one. As well as Ruo Xuan and Long Mo Er.

Long Mo Er observed Ye Furen, Mu Rong Ji Zi and Ruo Xuan as they conscientiously knelt on the mat. She followed them and knelt.

Their eyes were already closed as Long Mo Er glanced at the Buddha and then closed her eyes too

Chapter 79

A Sincere Prayer

Translated by CJ

Edited by Azurro

What to do?

What should she ask for?

Wish? What is her wish?

Long Mo Er, calm yourself and seriously think!

But in thinking, Long Mo Er found herself desiring for a lot of things!

She wanted to pray for Father and Mother's good health. She wanted to pray for her sister's and Brother Leng's eternal happiness. She wanted to pray for the good health of everyone at Ye Mansion. She wanted to pray for Ye Family's business to prosper. She wanted Ruo Xuan to find her happiness. She also wants to pray for herself so she can stay and accompany Ye Che. She wanted to pray for everyone to find out who she really is and not hold it against her. She wished for Ye Che to fall in love with her...

Good gracious! How could she wish for so many things?

When did she become so greedy? Will the Buddha think she's extremely greedy?

What should she do? What does she really want?

How come making a wish is also a difficult decision? Before wouldn't she just quickly wish on a star? How come she has a lot to say now?

Is she's taking too long?

Long Mo Er's mind suddenly became blank, *How come there's nothing?* This blankness instead allowed her to calm down.

She faintly opened her mouth and spoke in silence, "I wish that all the people beside me to obtain their happiness but I know this wish is not easily achieved. So I wish for Buddha to bless me and let me be beside Ye Che. Let him fall for me and may the two of us be happy together. This is what I wish for the most. I pray Buddha will bless me and make my wish come true. Although this is a little bit selfish but this is what I truly wish for."

After she was done praying, Long Mo Er opened her eyes and stood up.

"Wan Er, are you done?" Ye Furen asked.

"Yes, Mother."

"Since the Third Young Mistress is already finished praying, both of you can go first and have a rest." The Buddhist abbot suggested.

"Very well."

Ye Ruo Xuan stood beside Long Mo Er, locked arms with her as they walked outside. Looking back as the hall became distant, Ruo Xuan came near Long Mo Er and whispered, "Third Sister-in-law, what did you wish for?"

"Young miss, you really want to know?"

"Of course." Ye Ruo Xuan nodded her head a few times.

"Then, will you let me know what you wished for?" Long Mo Er smiled as she asked the question.

"Huh?" Ruo Xuan looked a bit distracted. She didn't expect Long Mo Er to come up with something like this. Her face began to go red. "Aiya! Never mind! If you say it, it won't come true!"

"Fine, I'll let you off. We can tell each other what we wished for once it comes true. How about it?"

"Sure!" Ye Ruo Xuan smiled and nodded. "When it comes true, I will definitely tell Third Sister-in-law. At that time, you should also tell me if your wish came true. You should keep your word and tell me later!"

“Fine, I won’t cheat you!” For the first time, she saw how innocent Ye Ruo Xuan was... as if she was still a child. Long Mo Er had no other choice but also smile happily.

Chapter 80

Shy

Just alike what Mu Rong Ji Zi told, the surrounded of Wan Nian Temple is so quiet and beautiful. Long Mo Er brings Lu Qun with her to sight-seeing, she has loved this quiet and elegant environment, she feels this place is suit her so much. She likes this natural-comfortable feeling but also at same time able to make her heart in peace.

This place really a sacred place! Only by standing in here she's able to feel calm and composed, if she could stay here longer it will be better!

If she refused to come at Wan Nian temple, refused to leave the Ye's mansion, so she won't able to feel such close and peace atmosphere! So actually, going out like this isn't something bad! If Ye Che also could come, would he be able to feel this peaceful atmosphere and also beautiful place? In that way, he might feel little bit relaxed, would he be able to take his time for forgetting all the matters of Ye's, in that way, would he be able to feel little bit rejoice and happy?

If Ye Che could accompany her, together walking in this wood, it might be great!

Aiya, it so hateful! Still thought about Ye Che again! His face is so clearly appear in front of her eyes, the angry expression, the expressionless face, his cold face, his gentle face....

This quiet and elegant environment are able to give someone, kind of thoughts, does it mean Wan Nian Temple really able to make wish comes true just as folks said? Will her wishes really can be come true? Will she and Ye Che are able to stay forever, together?

Suddenly that happiness scenes just appearing in her mind, it makes Long Mo Er smiles like a fool.

“Little Miss, what happen? Are you feeling uncomfortable?” Lu Qun didn’t know what she was thinking, but seeing from her strange expression in her face, she called her louder, it just interrupt Long Mo Er’s beauty dream.

“Lu Qun, why are you shouting!” Long Mo Er little bit angry when Lu Qun interrupt her beautiful dream, reprimanded her.

“Little Miss, you are looked so weird just now! I was so worried about you! You still reprimanded me!” Lu Qun looked her with grievance expression.

“Aiya, Lu Qun, I am so sorry, I just have thought something, you interrupted, of course I....” Later when Long Mo Er made eyes contact with Lu Qun, she dared not to continue. “I don’t mean to blame you! Don’t angry with me?”

“How could I angry to Little Miss. Little Miss, was you thought about Third Young Master?” Lu Qun just made right guessed.

“How could I?” Long Mo Er feels little bit embarrassed so she avoided Lu Qun’s eyes, looking at others surrounded.

Impossible? Does her face and expression are really written Ye Che’s name? Was it really that obvious? Oh Heaven! How this could be! How could this being seen by others? Won’t it be really obvious? If really being guessed right by others, should she laughed to deny?

“Ha Ha, hm, no!” Lu Qun smiled, she has followed her Little Miss for such long time, how could she not notice and guessed her little miss thought due to response she showed! In order not to make her little miss embarrassed, she pretended as if she didn’t know anything. Ha Ha, but still it was so laughable! Falling in love with other person really can make fun of that people, so when her love will show up? She really wants to feel and experience like how her little miss feels! The feeling of happiness!

Aiya, My God, You should pity on this little maid! I also want to experience loves someone! If not, in few years later I will be old maiden! My Heaven, My God please pity on me!

Chapter 81

Meeting her

“Lu Qun, you have strange expression, what are you thinking about?” After Long Mo Er calm down herself, she turned her back and looked Lu Qun who joined her palms in reverential gesture of respect (Praying), lower her head and closed her eyes as if she is asking for something.

“Nothing! Little Miss, I... I just... praying to the Heaven that you and Third Young Master are always together and happy!” Heaven! I am so sorry, please don't blame me because I am lying, I didn't tell the truth, please don't punish me! If I really say honestly it will be little bit awkward, so that my Heaven, please don't be angry! I don't have any option than lying, by seeing how loyal I am as maid, please forgive me! I really don't want to be old maiden, who cannot marry!

“Are you praying for me? But why your expression looked so suffer? It seems that you are unwillingly?” Long Mo Er saw that her expression similar to someone is going to cry, so that she not really believes her. “Am I really spoiling you too much? You are looked more and more strange.”

“Little Miss, nothing. I am really loyal to you, every matter regarding Little Miss, I always put in my heart. You don't need to suspect me, do I ever lied to you for these past years?” Heaven, Little Miss, this time I lie because special case la!

“Little Miss, am I really looked that strange? But I think you are weirder! I won't able to be compete with you, please don't wrong me. Little Miss, You....” In the middle of way when Lu Qun tries to give an explanation, she sensed that Long Mo Er not focus on her anymore, but Long Mo Er has looked to the other side but her eyes sight seems weird. Lu Qun stopped, she turned back herself.

When she saw the person at her back, she dumbfounded for while.

That is one of the beautiful girl that able to make others girl be forgotten. A pair of phoenix eyes, the long eyes lashes, high straight nose, glossy red lips, tall and slim body, her pink clothes are so match with her skin tone, she just perfect as lady.

That beautiful lady is looking at Long Mo Er with sweet smiles, and then she slowly and gently walking toward them.

“Are you Little Miss Long? We are meet again, did you remember me?” that beautiful girl gently and warmly asked her.

Does this beautiful lady know little miss? Why can't she remember where they ever meet this lady? If little miss knew her then Lu Qun must be known her too. But why she does not have any impression about her? Who is she? Lu Qun is looking closely to that lady who comes closer, when she is closer to them, she realized that the lady has very white skin, her face also smooth and she also have clear skin.

Woah! She really super beautiful!

“Long Little Miss?” The beautiful lady looked at Long Mo Er who does not response, and then she called her once more time.

Lu Qun brings back her gaze from that lady to Long Mo Er. She sees that her little miss dumbfounded expression, she does not move but her eyes are stopped to that beautiful lady's, with little bit impolite way of seeing the in front beautiful lady.

Haha, little miss might being attracted by that beautiful lady! This lady is really had kind of beauty and charm to attract others.

“Hey, Little Miss, Little Miss.” The lady is took initiative to greet her, of course Lu Qun won't allow her Little Miss acted impolite, stare blankly to the person, so that she waving her hand in front of Long Mo Er. “Little Miss, she has called you.”

“Ah, how... are you.” Long Mo Er never thought that she would meet her again, she also never thought to meet her in such situation.

Chapter 82

Resentment

Long Mo Er could feel that every muscle of her face has been turned rigid, forget how to move, she only showed her cold expression. After all she just showed up in this moment, why should she appear in here? Her appearance just make Long Mo Er feel uneasy but also pain, little bit worry, little bit scare and afraid...

All of things that she afraid of suddenly appearing, Long Mo Er feels suffocated. All her happiness, her grateful, her content and all her wishes suddenly vanished; suddenly she feels not enough, everything just not real from the start till the end. Long Mo Er is trying to depend on her little bit strength so that she able to support herself to stand there, so that she didn't shrink back.

But, anyone can see the beautiful jade which hidden under her sleeves being gripped strong make into fist while her nails has embedded into her palm, even her palm redden. But her pain and hurt in her heart is more than the pain she feels in her palm!

"Long Little Miss, long time no see." That beautiful lady smiled, her face showed gentle expression, her eyes even show smiling gesture as if blooming flower. "Do you remember me?"

"I... I remember." Long Mo Er can feel that her voice is trembling.

"This lady, our little miss is third young madam, so you shouldn't address her Little Miss anymore, you should call her Third Young Madam!" when Lu Qun heard how this beautiful girl address her little miss as little miss then she kindly to remind her.

"Ye Fu Ren?" This beautiful lady eyes suddenly dim, everyone able to feel the dim of her eyes. But she faster regain herself to normal, she said few words.

After Long Mo Er heard that three words suddenly she feels little bit heavy, it makes her more suffocated. Ye Fu Ren, these three words when said from this lady's mouth, she feels more uncomfortable, as if mocking directly toward her.

“Can I have conversation with you, alone?” This beautiful lady eyes sharply piercing into Long Mo Er.

“Lu Qun, you go first, I will come back later.” After Long Mo Er heard, she didn't show any big response but just said to Lu Qun.

“Oh, Okay. Then, I take my leave, Little Miss you should be careful ya!” at this moment before Lu Qun left she able to feel the atmosphere turn be different.

But, who is that beautiful lady? There is no way that her little miss knows but she does not! Actually what this lady wants to talk with her little miss? No matter how she listened and she saw, she still not understood. Just now, little miss was still such happy but suddenly after the lady appeared her little miss changed. Oh no, I should go to find Big Young Madam and make report, ask her to take a look. Little miss being alone, I can't feel rest assured.

After decided, Lu Qun could see that Long Mo Er and that lady hurriedly leaving.

“Ling Ling, you also leave first! I... want to chat privately with Ye Fu Ren, you hurried go first.” That beautiful lady ordered her own maid to leave her.

From the start, Long Mo Er has focused her mind and thought at her, so when she has called out others name, Long Mo Er just realized that there still another person than her, this little girl looked so ordinary and normal.

“Yes, Miss. I take my leave first.” Ling Ling replied, but her eyes are looking sharply into Long Mo Er, her face showed such hatred expression as if it able to pierce deep into Long Mo Er's bones.

This little girl even can show such eyes sight, moreover her body able to emit such scary resentment aura. Long Mo Er body is trembling, brazen to make guess, that kind of eyes sight must be deep hatred! Long Mo Er paused for moment when she looked at Ling Ling's back who walk further.

Translated by CJ

Chapter 83: Fei Yan's Endless Misery

“Ye Furen, is the Young Master well?”

Hearing an aggrieved voice beside her, Long Mo Er rigidly turned towards where the sound was coming from. “I... Fei Yan... That is, he is well.” Long Mo Er tried her best to be considerate as she replied.

“Ye Furen, please don't worry about me. I merely wanted to know how he is doing. That's all. Please don't be distressed. I only... It's just been quite a while since I last saw him...” Fei Yan smiled weakly.

A few months ago, she was certain that the Young Master would never leave her and forever stay by her side. Even though she knew he would never marry her, he came every day at Bai Hua Fang to see her. She was content with the way things were, she was, after all, a kept woman. Even if the Young Master considered her as a confidant, she didn't hope for more. When he shares his troubles with her, she felt happy... Because she was the only person who saw the Young Master that way.

When she heard that the Young Master was taking a wife, she felt distressed thinking that he would stay away from her from then on. But he assured her that the marriage was merely a formality and that he was unlikely to feel strongly towards the other woman. When the Young master left his house on his wedding night and appeared at Bai Hua Fang, she thought she had won. At that time, she felt so happy. It seemed she was becoming more close to achieving her happiness.

But the joy she felt that night was short-lived!

The next morning when they took a stroll, they walked together but there was a small distance between them. And like that, the small distance between them grew and became bigger and bigger, that she couldn't even touch him nor know his true heart.

She would always remember that early morning when the Young Mistress came, she was so innocent and friendly, so different yet so warm when she

asked, “Are you Fei Yan? Bai Hua’s Fei Yan? Ye Che’s confidant?” Without any bit of disdain or resentment, the Young Mistress simply asked excitedly.

That straightforwardness and pureness was something that she, a kept woman, never had and will never be able to match. From the moment the Young Mistress appeared, she knew she might have already lost!

And she wouldn’t be able to do anything about it...

From that moment, she obediently stepped back, resigned to her fate and waited silently from behind.

Since that morning when she and the Young Master separated, she waited every day and looked forward to seeing him again and ended up asking about his whereabouts from other patrons and with each time, her heart breaking.

Affection, how can such a simple word be enough to destroy her, like a nearly exhausted flame!

Soon, she thought that the Young Master would never return and her heart almost gave up all hope. Then, he came. She was extremely happy that he did not forget her... that he still remembers her. Fei Yan remained as Fei Yan but her Young Master has changed.

His indifference confused her and she knew his heart has completely left here.

Her heart shattered...

Her sorrow became endless...

He... will never be hers.

Translated by CJ

Chapter 84

Long Mo Er and Fei Yan's Heartache

"Fei Yan, I... Ye Che... He's well!" Long Mo Er said while stammering.

Seeing Fei Yan and her expression, Long Mo Er felt like she was the bad guy.

Did she destroy their relationship? Before, she had hoped that they eventually will find a way to be together but she unknowingly fell for Ye Che.

Everything turned out differently than planned.

Is Fei Yan looking for her for help?

Does Fei Yan love Ye Che too? Lu Qun said before that Fei Yan is Ye Che's confidant... That what they had was profound. Now then, what would that make of her?

Just who does Ye Che love?

Long Mo Er's heart became anxious.

The person he loves... is it Fei Yan?

Long Mo Er began speculating randomly as her heart trembled and her chest constricted. Her blood barely able to pass through making her feel numb.

The only thing left was pain.

She heard that Ye Che was forced to marry her. If he were given the choice, then he would have continued to like Fei Yan!

All became like this when she came, everything is her fault. With her own hands, she broke what they had apart. She didn't know she was such a cruel person!

For her sister's happiness, she willingly married into the Ye Family. Her sister is happy but she had destroyed Ye Che and Fei Yan's happiness. Why did she overlook others' feelings when she made her decision? Did her coming really disrupted everything?

Then, what should I do?

Her sister told her before, *“If you found your happiness, don’t let go of it. Take courage and fight for it. No matter what people say, hold onto your happiness!”*

But, her happiness cost Fei Yan hers. *Can I courageously hold on to mine?*

Those words that she heard from her sister, why does it feel unrealistic?

Courageously chasing after one’s happiness is difficult! Could she really?

Doesn’t it feel like Ye Che has somewhat began to like her just a little? When she couldn’t be certain of Ye Che’s feelings, how could she be brave?

“I haven’t seen the Young Master in a long time!” Fei Yan couldn’t see Long Mo Er’s forbearing facial expression because of the tears that were falling from her eyes. “He used to come see me every day. No one besides his family could call him by his name, I can only refer to him as Young Master.”

“I... I didn’t know.” Long Mo Er said a bit surprised.

Hadn’t she always called him “Ye Che”? Since that first time they met, she called him by his name and had always been doing so. She didn’t know that other people were not allowed to call him by his name.

“You are special to Young Master. You are his legal wife.” Fei Yan said but uttering those words hurt and exhausted her strength.

She once thought she had a special place in the Young Master’s heart.

But that isn’t so. He didn’t make an exception for her...

She could only refer to him as “Young Master”... But Long Mo Er can call him by his name, “Ye Che.”

I always have my own reason why I dislike Fei Yan so much. This chapter is one of the reason....

Enjoy the chapter!

Chapter 85

Fei Yan's Farewell

Why could not she feel the happiness, forever? Since she was young she stayed at Bai Hua Lane, her background not good, never seen any of her family and relatives, just like this she has passed those years, until the time when Third Young Master appeared in her life, there was really the most happiest time in her life, and now until the last and at the end there's no happiness feeling anymore.

Why heaven not fair? Why she cannot have her own happiness? Fei Yan's Eyes wet with tears.

"Fei Yan, I am sorry."

Long Mo Er words made Fei Yan aware with her mood changing, hurry she suppressed her tears to drop. "You don't need to say sorry, you are Long Wan Er, you are the wife of Third Young Master, you don't need to say any sorry words."

You are Long Wan Er, you are the Third Young Master's wife!

When she heard it, Long Mo Er felt little bit dizzy.

Who can tell her, what should she do? She is not Long Wan Er, she is Long Mo Er! She is the substitute bride only, she is not the real person that Ye Che should marry! Did she do it right or not since the beginning? Her appearance in here, was it right or not?

She felt headache! So frustrated!

She, this fake bride, did she the person who separate them, taking the happiness which belong to them, has she changed be bad person? Since when she is starting to take the role as bad person?

"Ye Fu Ren, today my coming to here, there is no any intention, I just want to know whether the Third Young Master is good or not through you, it enough for me to know the answer. Please taking good care of the Third Young Master, I wish both of you together until white hairs and old age (until death do apart)."

Fei Yan gathered her courage, her face filled with smile and looking at Long Mo Er's eyes, said "Good bye, Ye Fu Ren. Promise me to make Third Young Master have happy life!"

The way of Fei Yan conveying her farewell, it made Long Mo Er unease!

When looking Fei Yan's foot step moving away, Long Mo Er opened her mouth: "Fei Yan."

Fei Yan stopped but she not looked back, she just silently standing there.

"Fei Yan." Did not know why, seeing the lonely back of Fei Yan, she could not help herself to call her.

But, what she wanted to say?

What should she do to comfort Fei Yan? First time when she met Fei Yan, she was bright and enchanting, but now, at this moment, her expression still that intoxicated but somewhat she lost that happy feeling, does all of these her fault?

"I... sorry, I also don't know what should I say but I feel so frustrated." Long Mo Er felt guilty and frustrating made her hard to say this few words.

"No need to say anything, just taking good care of Third Young Master."

After Fei Yan said these few words, she didn't give any chance for Long Mo Er, have big strides walking away... she has done with her words, she need to leave.

At this moment her face has been wet with tears, she frail. If now she turned her back afraid that she cannot persistent to take the moves.

Long Mo Er still trying to say something but at last she say nothing, looking at Fei Yan's back, lost in thought.

Azurro said: I might heartless to say Fei Yan, but the way Fei Yan bid farewell just too 狗血 (melodramatic)!

Chapter 86

All his body bleeding

What kind of emotion carried by Fei Yan when she left? While she, herself hurt to the point she speechless moreover Fei Yan, she must be hurt too!

At her back there was “chichachicha” little sound of something moving, Long Mo Er faster to turn her head, from far away she could see one person silhouette, shuddering with unstable step, perhaps, every moves that made is entailing strenuous efforts.

This strange and sudden figure showed up, it succeed to attract Long Mo Er's attention, it makes her to forget little while about the pain which caused by Fei Yan. Distract herself little while, so her focus and thought completely to that figure in front of her.

Who is he? There is no people surrounded, is he bad person? Long Mo Er feels little bit anxious, looking her surroundings.

But, another moment nothing happen as she thought. On contrary, from far away that wobbling figure has fallen down, heavily to ground.

“What happen to you? Is something happen ?” Long Mo Er looked at the person who lying in front of her, she ignored everything that she thought before, hurried she run closer that person.

At the time she gets closer, once she sees the person and then fall down, all over his body is fresh blood. That red blood is separating to his white robe, originally the ground is dry but now is wet with blood.

Long Mo Er is shocked by that red blood, she afraid so using her hand to cover her mouth, she tries hard to calm down herself so she is less nervous and afraid, but still her hand is shaking so terrible.

Heaven, what should I do? How can he bleeding this much? Did he injure? Has

he death already? Long Mo Er panicking make guessing, once she has thought perhaps he has already death, Long Mo Er trembling from head to toe.

But, the person who lying in the ground seems to make a move, he is still enduring that kind of suffer.

Once Long Mo Er sees him moving, her fear heart suddenly replace with excitement.

So that he is still alive, he has not death. No, she cannot let him die in front of her, she should help him. Long Mo Er brazen herself, she talked to herself: "Don't be afraid, should be brave, don't let him die, should help him. Should be brave, should be brave."

She encourage herself, walking forward, she stretch out her shaking hands to flip over that body which lying in the ground. After she clearly looked his face, seeing his unique gold-colored mask, Long Mo Er surprised she even shouted once. He is that live-saving doctor that saved person in Si Xin lake, the mysterious man with mask, he is really that mysterious man in white robe.

Seeing the person that she recognized, knew him, Long Mo Er feels so complicated, she completely does not know her mood.

She hurried lift his head, called his name: "White robe, white robe, you wake up! You cannot die! Please wake up. White robe." When Long Mo Er called him, her tears also streaming down from her eyes, she does not know why she does not want him die, he tightly closed pair of his eyes, compare to him who is bleeding all over body, She just able to cry.

"Later there will be people coming, could you open your eyes, please? White robe." Her mouth calling but Long Mo Er does not have any confident. If early she knew, she won't let Lu Qun left, if early she knew she would not let Fei Yan left. Now, what should she do? Long Mo Er is panicking. "White robe, you... you... should live."

The body of the man who wearing gold mask gradually cold, lying in ground, drop by drop the blood dropping down.

Thank you for all the comments...

Sorry can't reply one by one, will certainly read all the comment. Thanks you for some names such as Tinkerbells, busybee, julie, Englam, juli, others (too much to list)that put "thank you" and you guys opinion about the chapters in comment box in my every post.

All the comments really brighten my days

Good news : I will update one to two chapters daily substitue bride and blackbelly husband. Hopefully I will finish black belly before the end of year.

Chapter 87

Must be help him

The man who injured his whole body groaned once, he has responded although it was small sound, Long Mo Er heard it.

She hurried wipe her tears dry, she saw that man eyes suddenly open, initially she still feels so sad but suddenly she becomes excited and smiles. "White robe, ...too good... you are not death."

"Ah!" because of the white robe's wound touching the ground, so he made faint sound.

"Where do you hurt? Where the wound? What should I do? What should I do so that I can help you?" after she heard he able to make faint sound, of course Long Mo Er feels so happy. But, he is such big man, what she needs to do in order to help him? Again her face showed panic and nervous expression.

"What should I do in order to help you? White robe, can you speak something? You are doctor, you open your mouth, teaching me something? Actually what can I do for you?"

Long Mo Er's tear is starting to stream down.

"My... my robe....inside... there... is medicine to stop the bleeding, pain killer." The white robe was trying to use all his strength say one by one his words. The crack-dry mouth has been turned white and his face is pale white, while his forehead is sweating big beads.

Long Mo Er sees the slow and weak movement of his mouth so that she gets closer to his lip's corner in order to hear him.

"Okay, medicine, medicine." Long Mo Er got the instruction from the white

robe, she is starting to look for the medicine on him. In this moment she is not bother with the red blood in his body, she does not care with her fear, she just telling herself to help him.

Finally inside the robe near his waist, Long Mo Er found out the medicine box, quickly she took it out, when she got the medicine, she put all the medicine into his mouth.

“Do you feel any better? How’s it? Is it still hurt?” after Long Mo Er saw he ate all the medicine, hurried she asked him.

The white robe didn’t have any strength to answer her, after long time, he said: “Support...support me to...stand up.”

“Do you want to stand up?” Long Mo Er not really sure and then she asked. But, he did not respond on her. Long Mo Er immediately makes a motion. “Fine, I help you to stand up.”

With huge effort, Long Mo Er trying to make him stood up, making his body to lean by side of her body. All she has done, for Long Mo Er was so hard and also took out much of her energy, any time she might fall down, but she kept on telling herself that she should be brave and strong, she should help him. If she gave up then the white robe would die.

In this moment Long Mo Er’s hand has covered with blood, her clothes also stained with blood. She did not see all of it because her focus on the white robe rough breathing, she kept on worrying him.

“How do you feel, is it still hurt? Are you alright? White robe? Are you okay?” Long Mo Er voice was gasping for breath.

“Take... take me... to...doctor.” White robe’s head lean on Long Mo Er’s shoulder, he trying to say few words.

“En, okay. You should restrain, I will bring you to see doctor. You should restrain.” Long Mo Er almost crying while talking.

“I will help you, you cannot die.”

Chapter 88

Joking

Lu Qun brought Mo Rong Ji Zi to the wood, but no one there even the shadows.

“Lu Qun, are you sure this is the place?” Mo Rong Ji Zi didn’t see anyone shadows so she appeared to question Lu Qun. But she sniffed something with extraordinary smelly, in order not to have bad thought, Mo Rong Ji Zi just hope Lu Qun mistaken in remembering the place.

“Big Young Madam, I am so sure here is the place. I have very good memory, I won’t make mistake. But, where is my Little Miss? Big Young Madam, what should we do?” Lu Qun panic asking because she is so worried.

Just now, when she was looking for the big young madam, trying to describe about the lady, big young madam concluding that beautiful lady might the Bai Hua Lane’s Fei Yan. When she was asking herself, suddenly her memory recalled that she ever met her before, it was the first time when her Little Miss met Third Young Master that morning. She was the lady who was beside Third Young Master. After she knew Fei Yan identity she could not help herself to start worry.

If she knew earlier she was that Fei Yan, she would not leave her Little Miss alone there, let her Little Miss alone to face her. Little Miss is so pure, how could she win over the rival someone like Fei Yan ?

Now her Little Miss is disappeared, how could she explain to her Master, Madam and also her Big Miss? She let her Little Miss disappeared, this is the first time she cried because she confused, she just looking Big Young Madam with big eyes, hoping that she has way out to find her Little Miss back.

“Don’t be worry. Since she isn’t here, let we go searching others place to find her, perhaps we and Wan Er just missed each other, perhaps now she is inside

the temple. Let's we go back to check." Standing inside the wide woods, Mo Rong Ji Zi looking as far as her eyes can see hoping she is able to comfort Lu Qun and also herself with this.

"That's right. Let's we go back to check. Perhaps little miss has already back. Hurry up we looked for her." After Lu Qun heard, her face is filled with hope, she smiled. "Well, Big Young Madam, let we hurry back to the temple!"

"En, let's we back." Mo Rong Ji Zi saw there is faint smile in Lu Qun's face and then she also smiles to relax herself. "You are really one of the loyal maid! Wan Er have you beside her, The Long family must be so rest assured."

"Ha Ha, I am not that good like Big Young Madam said!" Lu Qun felt little bit embarrassed using her hand stroking her head. "Our Little Miss usually treat me alike sibling, really good. Moreover, we are growing up together since we were children. Little Miss treats me very good, of course I should treat her good too, I understand what called as being gratitude. In Long's household, everyone has very good relationship. Just like you Big Young Madam. My Master, Madam even Younger Miss are treating me very good, very considerate, they never thought me as outsider, never treat me alike maid."

"You, little maid really interesting, I quite like you. Or should I go to Wan Er to ask you, so later you just follow me!" Mo Rong Ji Zi joking.

"Ah, don't, I don't want to separate from my Little Miss." Lu Qun said without thinking. "Big Young Madam, please you don't do it, I don't want to leave my Little Miss."

"I am joking with you! Ha Ha, of course I know very well both of you and Wan Er are having good relationship. So that I just kidding with you. A noble person is not forcing others, I might not noble, but I also not someone who likes to force others, you rest assured."

"Scared me to death." Lu Qun relaxed.

"Alright, hurry we look for Wan Er."

"Yes."

They just not realized, not far from their place there was ground that stained with dried blood.

Chapter 89

The Chaos in Wan Nian Temple

Part One

After back to temple, Lu Qu and Mo Rong Ji Zi directly heading to Long Mo Er and Lu Qun room where they stayed.

“Little Miss, are you back? Little Miss?” Lu Qun calling with loud voice when she opened the room’s door. “Little Miss, are you here?”

Silent and the still same, it is quiet. Inside the room there is no one even the shadows, then others than temple, the single room does not have any extra space, there no changes, it still same just alike when they were leaving before, completely same.

The initially both of them are filled with expectation while looking inside the room meticulously but later both of them, looking at each other in dismay, again their mood little bit down, their expression changed to be so serious.

“Lu Qun, let’s we search inside the temple, perhaps Wan Er is inside the temple. Just don’t tell anyone, understand?” Mo Rong Ji Zi worried, but she is so composed.

“En, alright. I will go out to search.”

“Well, let’s we go separately to search her, later we gather in front of the temple front door.” Said Mu Rong Ji Zi.

“Understand, Big Young Madam, I go now.”

Seeing the Lu Qun who is hurried and panic, Mu Rong Ji Zi prayed that nothing will happen during this trip. “Hope that Wan Er is inside the temple, I hope nothing bad will happen.” Or else, really cannot predict what will happen later. Mu Rong Ji Zi eyes looked at the Buddha picture that hanging in the wall, and

then she walking out.

One hour has passed, Lu Qun and Mu Rong Ji Zi met in front of the temple main hall, after seeing each other faces, both of them understood that they cannot lie to themselves anymore, Long Mo Er really missing.

“Big Young Madam, what should we do? Where is my Little Miss? What should we do?” Lu Qun, this time she cannot hold herself anymore, crying. “All was my fault, if I not left her, Little Miss would not missing, what should I do?”

“Big sister in law.” Ye Ruo Xuan is walking closer, seeing Lu Qun crying and panic she asked, “Lu Qu, what happen?”

While crying, Lu Qun looked at Mu Rong Ji Zi, seeing that Mu Rong Ji Zi is not preventing her, Lu Qun who is crying so sadly, very gloomy opened her mouth and said: “Fifth Little Miss, my... my...Little Miss... is missing, hu!”

“What?” Ye Ruo Xuan shocked when she heard it, she thought they are joking but when she sees Lu Qu is crying, she knew they are not joking. At this moment her Big sister in law also showed stern face, very serious. “How it happen? How could she missing? Big sister in law, what this means?”

“Four hours ago, I was resting in my room. Lu Qun came and told me that, there was a beautiful lady who came to find Wan Er. I made the guess the person perhaps Fei Yan, when I recalled, Lu Qun also remembered. Wan Er, she was alone having conversation with Fei Yan in the wood.” Said Mu Rong Ji Zi.

“Fei Yan? The Bai Hua Lane’s Fei Yan? She even came to find Third Sister in Law, so what were they talking? What they said?” after heard Fei Yan, this name, Ruo Xuan is starting to worry, without she realized she also got nervous.

“I... I don’t know... Little Miss, she... wanted to say... Little Miss asked me to leave. Hu, if I knew... something like this... even I die... never... left.” Lu Qun still crying.

Chapter 90

Chaos in Wan Nian Temple

Part Two

“Have you checked the surrounded? Still haven’t found?” Ruo Xuan asked.

“En, had checked, not found.” Mu Rong Ji Zi face gloomy.

“So, Big sister in law, what should we do? Does mother know?”

“I not allowed Lu Qun to tell Mother yet, let’s we try to find her, perhaps we have missed some places, or perhaps we and Wan Er had missed each others, she might nearby. Don’t be worry.” Although Mu Rong Ji Zi worried, but in front of Lu Qu and Ruo Xuan, she still made herself composed, answered them. She tried to think positively, as the elder she cannot be hopeless.

“Well, Lu Qun, when Third Sister in law missing, have you seen Fei Yan? Did she still in nearby or not? Is there any possibility if we found Fei Yan then we would know where is third sister in law?” Ru Xuan asked again.

“That’s right, let’s we searching for Little Miss while looking for that Fei Yan too, Little Miss must be with her.” After Lu Qun heard this, immediately she smiled and wiped her tears, “Fifth Little Miss, you are really smart.”

Although Ruo Xuan said seriously, but still Mu Rong Ji Zi still cannot feel relieved. This is Ye Che, Wan Er, and Fei Yan, the triangle love among them, when the love rival met face to face, if Fei Yan said something bad, then would Wan Er get hurt? It is so obvious that Ye Che loves Wan Er, but does Wan Er know it? Did Wan Er and Ye Che relationship tested? At that time, she and Ye Yan also experience it and finally they are stayed together!

“We go back to search!” Ruo Xuan said, “Is it the wood located at back?”

“En.” Lu Qun nodded.

“Better we search separately! Big sister in law, takes a look in surrounded, Lu Qun waiting and search once again inside the temple, I will go to wood searching, okay?” Ruo Xuan said.

“Okay, Ruo Xuan you should be careful. We gather in here.” Said Mu Rong Ji Zi worried looking at Ruo Xuan, after all letting her—young maiden, quite dangerous being alone. If Yan here, it would be better, now there only few of them, women. What can they do? Just hoping Wan Er is alright.

“En, Big Sister in law, you don’t need to worry, since I was little I have came her with mother, I quite familiar with this place, you rest assured. Hurry up we looked for her!”

“Fine, be careful!”

Ye Ruo Xuan smiled before she left, it made her relieved little bit. Lu Qun also obediently searching and all of them are separately to search once again.

Ruo Xuan arrived at the wood, there is no one surrounded, she lift her head up, looking at the sky. At this time, sky is little bit dim, it is getting dark, while Ruo Xuan’s heart is as gloomy as the sky.

Ruo Xuan faster her steps, looking surrounded the wood and searching.

If that time Third Brother did not marry Third Sister in law, now she might the one who got married. Third Sister in law is amiable and approachable, very likeable, she does not have any showy and domineering attitude alike others missy, she really likes and satisfied with this Sister in law. Third Sister in law and Big Sister in law, both of them have different style , both of them have their own way in concerning her, let her feels so fortunate.

Now, she only hoping to find Third Sister in law as soon as possible, if Fei Yan really did something to Third Sister in law or said something that made Third Sister in law hurt, without hesitation Third Sister in law must really need someone to accompany her.

Falling in love with someone, although sometime it feels so sweet, but there is also a time just because of one word, one eyesight, one movement, it easier to get hurt. She is completely understood, but, this is secret in her heart.

Hurry up to find third sister in law!

Walking, after looking surrounded the wood, yet there still not find the person even the shadow. Ruo Xuan felt chilliness, but still she keep positive in mind, said to herself: "Big sister in law and Lu Qun perhaps have found her!" after she said, she back.

"Peng!"

Perhaps because of she is in hurried, or perhaps the sky is getting dark. Ruo Xuan tripped by her own long skirt, she fell in the ground.

She felt quite hurt, Ruo Xuan slowly stood up, prepared to clean the dirt in her cloth, and then she realized there is reddish liquid in her hand. When she looks carefully, Ruo Xuan realized that reddish is blood, a fresh blood. She didn't feel kind of severe pain, it must not hers but whose blood it is?

Ruo Xuan lowered her head to take a look, finally she realized there is big blood stain in the ground, it dried dark red colored, quite much blood.

"Ah?" Ruo Xuan is terrified and speechless.

What was happened in here? This blood, how could it be so much fresh blood? Whose blood it is? What was happen inside this wood? Would it, third sister in law's?

Ruo Xuan almost fainted when she thought about this possibility.

She cannot make herself calm. She must find third sister in law, this blood uncertainly is belong to third sister in law! Must hurry up find her!

Carefully to examine, Ruo Xuan realized the trace of the blood stain direction to southeast, Ruo Xuan starting to follow the blood stain.

The sky is unpredictable, it getting darker, the dark cloud has covered half of the sky, as if there can be rain at anytime.

Ruo Xuan observed the changes of weather, she faster her steps, followed the blood trace.

But not long after that, the sky is raining. The big bead of rain pouring down, heavily hit Ruo Xuan's face and her body. It little bit hurt. Not long after that the ground is wet, it compile become small line of river.

The trace of blood stain in front of Ruo Xuan is slowly disappearing because of

the rain. Ruo Xuan worried and even crying, her face wet with tears and rain water.

What should do? All is disappeared, what should I do? Cannot find third sister in law? Ruo Xuan hurried running to the in front, she hopes some of the blood stain still there, so that she able to find her third sister in law, she cannot gives up.

But at the turned to the next corner, she has fallen apart.

In front of her eyes there is fork in the road.

Which path should she choose? Which way has third sister in law taken? Which path should she take to find her third sister in law? Perplexed!

The rain water make the vision blurred, she gritting her teeth while choosing the path, continuing the way and move forward in the dark.

Still raining, the sky is dark. Ruo Xuan is quivering while her head little bit dizzy, but when she thought about the blood, she gritting her teeth and continuing. It has been already dark at her surrounded. She does not know which path to take in order to go back to the temple, so that she moves forward.

Her feet slipped, Ruo Xuan fell down. She fell and rolled in mountain road, lost her consciousness.

The rain water washed her body, heaven not even kindly to her even at her current situation.

91

Translate by Obsidian

Chapter 91

He Wakes Up

A sliver of bright light penetrated the horizon. Soft, gentle sunlight lit up the earth. If the earth wasn't already dry, water would still be dripping on the tree leaves and grass. And perhaps nobody would be aware that the rain which began yesterday night continued through to this morning, a heavy rain.

The person on the bed suddenly moved his body but in the end that small movement pulled at his wound. He pursed his eyebrows in pain. To ease the pain, he didn't dare move and slowly just opened his eyes to see the girl in front of his lying body.

Recalling when he got wounded, he had a fuzzy recollection of a girl rescuing him. It seemed now that girl is the one in front of his eyes. Given the color of the sky, she must have taken care of him the entire night. As a result, it now was time to sleep.

He had no way to see what she was like owing to her face being buried in her arms. He was unable to see what she looked like. But that really was unimportant. What was significant was that she is just a girl. Even though after encountering this sort of matter, there was neither confusion nor fear whatsoever. On the contrary she calmly rescued this chance stranger, two people unfamiliar with each other, nothing more. She really put forth effort in his shocking situation. How is she a strange girl?

The world has a few of these types of female rescuers?

He'd already be departed from the world if she hadn't saved him. He had no opportunity to meet them again any more. The wound as before would forever exist in his the pit of his stomach, wouldn't it?

Actually dying is also a type of relief. That sort would allow him to see her again. They could see each other again.

But the girl in front of his eyes saved his life, retrieved it back. Was this fate or

the will of Heaven?

Could it be that his fate wasn't being cut short? The heavens as before wants his ordeal to continue?

The girl in front of him moved, lifted her head. Gentle eyes. Sleeping in this place, this situation, allowed her to be uncomfortable! He clearly saw her face after she put down her hand. He immediately recognized her. She is that girl who was by the lakeside when he saved that boy.

Long Mo Er looked at him clearly again. The smile on her face disappeared and instead appeared in her eyes. It seemed like for a moment she was full of life. "Bai Yin Chen, really good. You've finally woken up."

Smiling, Long Mo Er turned her head. Looking toward the door she called in a loud voice, "Doctor, doctor, he's awake. Doctor, he's awake, doctor."

"I..." Bai Yin Chen opened his mouth to speak and discovered the pain of his dry throat. Absolutely nothing came out of his mouth. His mouth was that dry that the words in his mouth were affected.

"First, don't say anything. I'll go get water. You need to drink some water first." Long Mo Er prevented him from opening his mouth. Her body quickly got up and walked to the side of the table and poured water into the cup. She returned to the side of the bed with the cup of water.

Skillfully lifting Bai Yin Chen's dusty head, Long Mo Er delivered the cup to the side of his pale white cracked lips.

After drinking a little water, finally the white lips were not parched. His appearance now allowed Long Mo Er to be happier. He finally was awake. He was saved by her. He didn't die in front of her eyes. This type of feeling was really too wonderful.

Although he was still weak, his face was still so pale, but indeed he was alive. A reprieve from death, this compared to everything else was the most important thing. She felt fully satisfied. From her childhood onward, this was the first time she felt this much accomplishment.

Life truly emotionally moves people.

Chapter 92

Long Mo Er's difficulty

Half of the day, the doctor is coming inside the room from outside, directly sitting beside the white robe side; he stretched out his hand and examined the white robe's vein.

"Doctor, how? Now he has awake, does it mean his condition is not dangerous anymore? Is he completely alright?" Long Mo Er is facing the doctor who does not have any expression in his face, it worried her.

Silent for the moment, finally the doctor let go the white robe's hand, said: "Last night he had endured well, so that won't be dangerous anymore. He lost too much blood, the wound that hurt by the knife little bit serious, but he has passed the critical condition, he is alright now. His body just weaken little bit, not a big problem. I will prescribe the medicine, you give him to drink, for these few days you should change the medicine regularly for his wound. Should be careful in taking care for these days, then it will be fine." Said the doctor and stood up, walking out.

"Thank you doctor." Long Mo Er happily said, "White robe, you are alright! Too good."

The white robe cannot make a move or even talking but seeing Long Mo Er happy expression, he realized this type of little girl is able to make others emotionally touching and rare. After she heard that he is alright, it makes her happy naturally, all of her emotion is expressed by herself completely, moreover her attitude is able to influence everyone besides her. It feels as if there is warmness in the air. She really is someone special, very strange person. Suddenly he feels bizarre, at this moment he feels so good that he still alive, able to live is really good, being able to witness all of these are really lucky and touching. All the emotions have influenced by this little girl.

She really special!

After the doctor left, Long Mo Er sat down in front of the white robe, she smiled at him, "Doctor said it is okay now, you must rest assured? You should hurry up to get well! Before when you were in lake saving people, you were looked so confident and at ease, really elegance, really skillful. You must get well soon." Long Mo Er spoke softly, slowly talked about her experience when first time she met white robe.

Time is slowly flies inside this small room.

"You must be hungry now, I will go to cook porridge, you must take a rest for while." Long Mo Er herself also felt hungry, she just remembered that they haven't eaten, she immersed herself happily speaking with him, almost forget the important matter. He is patient, of course he needs to eat something nutritious, less greasy food so that he will recover faster, she really stupid.

She covered white robe with quilt, Long Mo Er walking outside the small room.

Walking in the middle of courtyard, Long Mo Er looked her surrounded trying to size, searching for kitchen. After she examined the surrounded, she walking passing the corridor, she walked inside the medicine store, finding the doctor.

After walking to the doctor side, Long Mo Er asked: "Doctor, can I use the kitchen for the moment?"

The doctor not immediately gave an answer, on contrary his expression changed and asked: "Lady, when will you pay me the medical fee? I see your appearance and also your aura are not same with other commoner lady, yesterday I had made an exception to let you guys to stay here, and also cured him. Can we count the debt before you continuing staying here?"

Chapter 93

Endure the pain

The doctor let Long Mo Er taken aback and stared at there, said nothing.

Did not understand what the meaning of Long Mo Er silentness, the doctor little bit worry of the money that she owed, hence he spoke in order to remind her: “Lady, you paid me yesterday medicine fee, I will immediately continue to prescribe the medicine for him, after the medicine cooked, I will send it to you, we can settle the payment then.”

“En... doctor, I... later I will give you immediately, I go out for while.” After Long Mo Er said, without waiting the response from the doctor, in exhausted condition she got out from the store, walking in the street.

Money, she does not have any!

Seeing doctor and medicine all are need money, but where should she get the money? Every time when she goes out buying stuffs, Lu Qun always brings the money, she never bother with all of these things. Never thought now, there is a day that she needs money, earlier if she know, she will bring it little bit, does not have money how can save white robe?

Seeing the white robe condition, all of his body is scar, he must be someone poor. Well, it better for her to think the way. But, what can she exchanged with money?

Lift up her head looked at the sky that not early anymore, Long Mo Er just realized that she had brought white robe seeing doctor but had not said to anyone. Mother, sister in law, Ruo Xuan and Lu Qun must be so worried, looking for her? Heaven, what should I do? Where is she now? Where Wan Nian temple located?

Missing for one night, did she make everyone worry about her? Did they think

something happen to her? Ah! What should do?

Has she little bit late for thinking about it? Today mother and others must be back to Ye's mansion, have they left already? Did Ye Che know that she missing? Every time she thought about Ye Che, her heart is tightening.

Yesterday when seeing Fei Yan leaving her back looked quite bleak, Long Mo Er felt little bit sad.

Would it be better if she missing? If she is missing, Ye Che can back to the time when he still with Fei Yan, there is no her as third wheel, Fei Yan also no need to be that sorrowful! Both of them must be happy, mustn't them? She should leave, shouldn't her?

From the beginning Ye Che never told her that he likes her, even the little bit likes, he never told her, he must be likes Fei Yan, that very beautiful lady! She missing and leaving, he might still that cold and expressionless without any reaction! He would not worry about her! He would not panic because of her!

Then just left—after sometime, waiting until white robe recover, and then go back! White robe still that weak, he still needs someone to take care of him, she cannot leave him, right?

But, when say leaving, why she feels heartache?

“Still better not to think this, the focus must earn money first! White robe is still waiting for money to help his life!” Long Mo Er bitterly spoke softly to herself, she is trying hard to distract her heartache to other thing.

Actually how can she earn money?

At this moment, Long Mo Er sees there is store not far from her, the plate sign “Pawn”, so she guesses it must be pawn shop.

Long time ago she ever read book in her home, she remembered that inside the book written that pawn shop is a place where people able to exchange things with money. So that can she get inside to have a look?

Chapter 94

Relinquish

Long Mo Er is walking inside the pawn shop, after the sharp eyes of the owner seeing Long Mo Er appearance, immediately he asked: “Lady, what thing that you want to pawn? Or do you want to buy something?”

“Boss, does the thing that pawn can be exchanged with money?”

“Lady, of course it can be exchanged. What kind of thing that you want to pawn?” The owner asked.

“I... I don't have any thing that I can pawn, what should I do?” Long Mo Er completely cannot think what kind of thing with her that able pawned.

“Hm, well? Let me see.” After the owner heard what she said, carefully he observed, instantaneously he guessed this lady importance.

The owner undoubtedly know that she must be came from high status family, perhaps because of the family environment forced, or else how could she comes here, she also not really understood about this? He has seen many people coming to his place, but everyone who enter his place is client, this simply is the business rules that people like him do.

He is carefully looking at Long Mo Er appearance.

His sharp eyes spotted some of Long Mo Er's accessories which quite valuable, especially her blue hairpin with pearl. That blue color hairpin with pearl is glamour and elegance, luster and bright, completely flawless jade, very rare ones. Compare to all accessories in his store, this blue hairpin with pearl is magnificent.

“Lady, your blue hairpin with pearl can be pawn to exchange with much money, what do you think?” The owner realized the value, immediately opened his mouth.

“Ah? Blue hairpin with pearl? Did you mean the blue color hairpin with pearl bead that I used?” Long Mo Er excited asked.

“Lady, the pearl hairpin is especially unique, the material and the workmanship are very awesome. Lady if you don’t know what to use to pawn in order to exchange with money, I think you can use it as place as collateral.”

“But....” It was given by mother, it is Ye’s thing, how can she pawn it to exchange with money? It was mother intention toward her! “Boss, is it only this hairpin that able to be pawned? Or can I pawn any other thing beside it?”

Long Mo Er hurried removing her stuffs, the ear ring and others, all put in front of the owner, looking at him.

“Lady, all can be pawn. But, you seems to have an urgency with money, all of these things that you pawn cannot be exchanged with much money, because all of these only an ordinary accessories.” It is business, the owner won’t let the business slip away easily, continuing said, “Lady, if you are really reluctant for the hairpin, you pawn today and later when you have money, you come back to our store to make redemption. Just think that we are helping Lady to keep it, as long as you have money you can come to exchange it back. By this way, Lady you can rest assured.”

To have medical treatment, it really needs much money, the white robe is still so weak, she indeed really needs money! Does she really need to exchange the blue hairpin with pearl which given by mother with money? That is mother and others of Ye’s treasure and also love toward her!

Is it the will of heaven so that she can take it to exchange with money, what should she do?

Now she able to see the benevolent face of Madam Ye floating in front of her, seeing the gentle face of Ye Che, seeing the white robe weak face....

Long Mo Er takes off pearl hairpin, putting on her hand, lightly holding it.

She gritting her teeth, harden her heart, Long Mo Er took off and pawn it to the pawn shop owner. “Boss, when I have the money I will certainly come to redemption it back, boss you cannot sell it, I beg you, can I?”

“Lady, you rest assured!” The pawn shop owner took the hairpin and observe it

carefully, calculating, from the drawer he takes out the amount money that equal to the price of the pearl hairpin, putting down in front of Long Mo Er. “Lady, this is your money.”

Long Mo Er received the heavy money, while her heart also as heavy as the money. “Boss, I will certainly come back to redemption. I will certainly come back.”

After Long Mo Er said, she is walking out from the shop.

Chapter 95

Ye Che Arrived

Clear sky early in the morning, the sun shines earth; the sun light is so gentle and warm. Being cleared by the heavy rain, at this moment the weather is such clean and full with vitality.

Initially this kind of weather, this kind of sun light must be made people feel content and comfortable, but inside the Wan Nian temple, it filled with gloomy and unbearable heavy atmosphere, at this moment no one have mood to enjoy this beauty.

Outside—— after heard one of the horse carriage sound, people who inside the courtyard hurried came out, they knew the people that they have been waiting nervously already come. Two handsome faces showed up in front of everyone.

“What was happened? What was going on exactly? Saying that she is missing, what did this mean? What was happen with her? What was happen yesterday? How could she missing? What was happened to her? Mother, what was going on? How could Ruo Xuan also missing? How could be like this? You guys faster tell me.” After Ye Che looked at them, hurried he jumping down from the horse carriage, anxiously walking to their direction asking them.

“Third Young Master, my Little Miss....my Little Miss...she is missing. Hu! I... cannot find...her.” Actually Lu Qun has stopped crying but when she saw that face of Ye Che, she cannot hold and crying louder.

“Actually what is going on, what you are crying for, hurry tell me what the matter. What happen with her and Ruo Xuan?” Both of Ye Che’s hand grabbed on Lu Qun’s shoulder, his voice little bit stern, his voice higher little bit.

“Ah!” Lu Qun feel pained being grabbed, no one ever seen Third Young Master acted like this before, Third Young Master face looked so scary, so scary that

even able to make Lu Qun trembling.

“Che, have free your hand!” The person who followed at Ye Che’s back is Gu Na Yan who spoke after seeing Lu Qun trembling, he stretched out his hand to pull open Ye Che’s hand. “Che, you should clam down first, let we hear Lu Qun, hear the explanation of Auntie and big sister in law, after that we can think the way, okay? It such useless if you hurried like this, calm down.”

Gu Na Yan—early in the morning he has wake up from his bed, and then he coming with his in front person who looked as if eaten explosion, they were coming here together by horse carriage. Early in the morning he received Ye Che’s message, saying that Long Wan Er and Ruo Xuan missing, of course he also needed to show his concern and help. As name of friendship and because they are best friend even the knife piercing will not avoided, moreover Long Wan Er and Ruo Xuan are his sisters, happen this kind of thing, how can he do nothing?

Seeing how panic Ye Che, Wan Er is completely have placed important in Ye Che’s heart, he really falling in love with Wan Er, he loves her so deeply, cannot free himself. Che finally found someone that he loves. The olden time Ye Che is someone cool and collective, perfectly composed person. When hearing Long Wan Er missing suddenly this matter able makes him to be panic, the usual cold completely gone with Long Wan Er who is still missing. No matter what, Gu Na Yan, he must help to find Wan Er back.

“Mother, big sister in law, can you tell me what is exactly happen? The missing that you told me what it meant?” Ye Che calm down his mood, turned to look at Madam Ye who beside him asked.

Madam Ye looking at her own son expression, worried, her heart unsettled, after seeing Mu Rong Ji Zi eyes sight, Mu Rong Ji Zi slowly telling them about the matter happened yesterday.

97 – 98

SUBSTITUTE BRIDE

Rui is helping me to translate this chapter so all the credit goes to Rui.
Rui summarized Chapter 97 because Rui thought chapter 97 is too boring so only translated Chapter 98 in fully.

Chapter 97 and 98

Chapter 97

Finally Ye Che regains himself back. He stops to be lost and He started to ask Lu Qun about the situation last time before Long Mo Er missing after having conversation with Fei Yan. On other side, Gu Na Yan is really happy to see Ye Che whose eyes are shining brilliantly. He comes back to his old self.

Gu Na Yan believes Ye Che loves Long Mo Er and he gives his blessing for Ye Che and Long Wan Er happiness.

Lu Qun brings Gu Na Yan and Ye Che to the wood where last time she saw her Miss before missing and tell them everything she knows. Gu Na Yan and Ye Che are starting to analyze why Long Mo Er Missing? Why Fei Yan looking for Long Mo Er, what was both of them talking? Fei Yan motives and others possibility.

**

Chapter 98

At the same time when Gu Na Yan makes his analyzing, Ye Che also trying to guess what Fei Yan said to Mo Er.

What the motive Fei Yan coming here? What she said that affected to Mo Er? Why must Mo Er leaving? Ye Che really can't make guess for all of it. What is happened between both of them? Does Fei Yan really someone difference as who he thought? Did she say something harsh until hurt Mo Er?

So that, Mo Er felt hurt and left?

Thoughts of Long Mo Er face which wet by tears, her heart hurt, Ye Che heart is tightening, he starts to worry her.

Must find her out, should talk with her clearly.

“Just now I have checked, I realized there are two paths, those paths are heading to small town, we can go along the path to search, if both of them were leaving this place, perhaps went there, let's we go to see.” Ye Che carefully made his analyzing.

Gu Na Yan agreed.

“En.” In the situation where Lu Qun can’t find her Miss, she has been so panic, no idea, the best she only listen to every command. Hopes that can find her Miss quickly, she never left her Miss since both of them were child.

Go along to one path, all of them are walking together. Just as Ye Che predicted, not long after that, they are arrived at small town.

This town is really not big, at one look it able to see the small town edge.

“Let’s we separate, I go to East, Lu Qun and Gu Na Yan go to South. Later we meet in here.” Ye Che said.

“Yes, Third Young Master.”

Gu Na Yan nodding his head, He sees Lu Qun who still looking at Ye Che, not in good mood: “Have promised, have said clearly, why haven’t made move? Are you trying to slacking off in here?”

“No, I don’t. I don’t to think for slacking off.” Lu Qun immediately retorted.

“Well, hurry followed me.” Gu Na Yan has started to walk heading to the East.

“Oh.”

Lu Qun knows this “Xi Yan Gong Zi” every times he speaks so casual, likes to kidding. But, this time he does not speak that casual and make her sadder.

All because of her, if she followed her Miss, her Miss would not be missing. After thinking, Lu Qun silently crying, this time she not even has courage to cry loudly. Indeed this time her Miss missing because of her slacked off, all is her fault. If her Miss not back, she can’t forgive herself for the entire life.

At the back there is no sound, Gu Na Yan feels little bit strange, turned back, he realized Lu Qun who followed his back is lowered her head, she is surrounded with thick guilty feeling.

Gu Na Yan stopped his footsteps, standing straightly at there, waiting for Lu Qun to get closer.

When Lu Qun found out she has bumped into someone, she bumps to one’s hard chest, suddenly she lifts her head up, looking at Gu Na Yan’s deep black

eyes.

“Why are you crying again?” Gu Na Yan sighed, he takes up his handkerchief, he wipes Lu Qun tears. “Don’t cry anymore, we will be able to find Wan Er safely, believe me!”

“I won’t let anything bad happen to Sister Wan Er, although you are not believes on me, but you must believe on Ye Che, he won’t let Wan Er lost. She just not understands the feeling between her and Ye Che in this moment, just wait until she understands it, he will absolutely comes back to his side because she loves him.” Gu Na Yan spoke softly.

“During the time we looking for her, we also give her time to think, the important thing that we do now aren’t looking for her but more to give her time to consider and think her love to Ye Che.”

Chapter 99

Searching

“Understand? Little girl, don’t cry anymore. We must have endurance! Trust me!”

This time when seeing Gu Na Yan who has changed expression, Lu Qun has forgotten to cry. Although she not really understanding what he said, but she feels he spoke reasonable. Lu Qun chooses to believe on him, this serious Gu Na Yan perhaps can be trusted.

Suddenly Lu Qun realized this Gu Na Yan is more handsome, more mesmerizing.

No wonder she had heard many ladies like him, even this time her heart is beating faster.

“This is for you, you wipes by yourself! Girl smiles more is better, if crying will turn be ugly!”

“HaHa.” At moment, Lu Qun has already laughing because of him, she shows her smiles that not come into sight for the last two days.

“Well, let we go to search!” seeing Lu Qun smiled, Gu Na Yan can feel relieved.

Does not know why seeing the unattractive person in front of him who face wet with tears, to his surprised he feel tenderness toward her, does not want to see her crying. When he thought it, Gu Na Yan smiles, perhaps because he had woke up so early in the morning by Ye Che, not have proper rest, so that he can be so patient with this girl.

“En, okay.” Lu Qun obediently listened to him.

“We can ask those aunties and uncles who are in the side street, follow me.” Gu Na Yan said to Lu Qun.

Lu Qun follows at Gu Na Yan's back, asking while walking."

Ye Che also tries his best to ask every person who in the street, also goes for few stores, Ye Che patiently gets inside to every stores.

But, everyone who he has asked always said don't know."

Get this kind of answers he really does not know how he should react on it. Time is passing longer and he even worried her more. Mo Er, his Mo Er, where are you going? And also Ruo Xuan, where did Ruo Xuan go? Did both of them together? Or still they didn't meet each other yet?

Thinking for the thousand possibilities, Ye Che really is going to be crazy.

His eyes looking at in front drug store, "Hong Ji", Ye Che shook his head and leaving, he continues heading to one others shop.

He must bring Mo Er back, later he must keeps her tightly beside him, let her under his guard, won't let her have chance to escape from him anymore. She is destined to follow him forever in his side, he will never let her left him for the rest of life.

His heart is filled by hers, why she left him this easy? Why didn't she come to his in front and asking him about his feeling in order to get the answer? Why must she foolishly left? Really little foolish! Doesn't she know that everyone is worried about her?

No matter what, he must bring her back.

Ye Che steady his footsteps, continuing to search her.

He hasn't told her, how he likes her, how he loves her, after he found her, he won't hesitate to tell her.

After half day later, Ye Che meets Gu Na Yan and also Lu Qun who are separately searching finally gathered.

Seeing Gu Na Yan shaking his head, Ye Che already knows the answer.

Secretly he signed in his heart, Ye Che speaks: "let we get back, you and Lu Qun go to Long's household, take a look whether she in Long's household or not. I will be back to home and then visit Bai Hua Lane to find Fei Yan. We go separately."

“En, this is the best, Che, you must settle down this matter carefully.” Gu Na Yan said.

“I understood. Reassured, I will settle it.” Ye Che understood Gu Na Yan intention, so that his answer is very composed. He should go to speak clearly with Fei Yan, he does not want when Long Mo Er back, this kind of thing will happen again.

Chapter 100

The flowing love

Because that time when Ye Che and Gu Na Yan came, both of them were coming by their own horses, and the initially idea Lu Qun and Madams Ye were going back by the horse carriage. The time was tense; Lu Qun has already pulled to the horse by Gu Na Yan, sitting in horseback with him

“Ah! Young Master Na Yan.” Lu Qun who pulled to the horse screamed, because her body is too close with Gu Na Yan’s body she felt uncomfortable, moving.

“If you don’t want to fall down, sit properly.” Gu Na Yan spoke to her with the sound that only can be heard by two of them.

“Che, let’s go! We directly go to Long household, if there is news, I will try my best to inform you.” Gu Na Yan looked at Ye Che who horse is in his side.

“En, alright.”

“Let’s we move.”

“Na Yan, thank you.”

Ye Che spoke formally which caught by Gu Na Yan’s ears, while Gu Na Yan who sitting in horse smiles, “It is okay, let’s we hurry go to check, perhaps sister Wan Er has already at Long Household. Let’s go!”

Actually they have known for long time, there is nothing needs to say because everything is understandable.

“Jia*”

* 驾 *Jia* : drive (interjection indicating to move while horse riding)

Two horses are starting to fly toward to city.

Lu Qun who still in Gu Na Yan’s embraces feel extremely uncomfortable, this is

her first time to have direct-contact with man, and also in this kind of situation. All her entire body is surrounded by Gu Na Yan's masculine smell, Lu Qun feels little bit hazing; she does not know what she should do.

She and he are two people with different status, how can he this easy to taking care of her? He even hugged little maid alike her, her heart is starting to beat faster.

Lu Qun is trying her best not to make Gu Na Yan realized, lightly turned her head, looking at Gu Na Yan's face. He has smiling eyes, his mouth is curved upwards, it shows as if he has confident in himself. In Lu Qun memories, Gu Na Yan expression is always this gentle, kind of gentleness which able to make people feel he is coquettish, but also when comes with serious matter, he could deal in steady and earnestly, give people secure feeling, can put trust to him forever. Although her first impression of Gu Na Yan not really good, but it can't be denied he is good person.

Although he is Young Master from wealthy family, but he just similar to Ye's family few Young Masters, he does not have little bit arrogance of common Young Master, which makes people easy to get close to him.

This is the Gu Na Yan that she knows!

"Have you seen enough? Although I know that I grow quite good looking, every girl is mesmerizing with this handsome face, but, now we are riding horse! If you focus on looking at me, I could get distracted! Be careful if I get distracted, both of us will fall down from the horse!" Gu Na Yan who eyes is looking in front, suddenly turned his direction and looked at Lu Qun's face. His word is succeeding to withdraw her face back, the distracted Lu Qun.

"Ah!" alike thief who get caught, Lu Qun nervously turned back her head, her body unsteady, as if lost her balance and will fall to other side.

My God! How can be she embarrassed herself by stupidly looking at his face?

He just in urgency to help Third Young Master to search for Little Miss, actually why she thought running wild! Lu Qun vexed!

"Be careful, hurry gain back yourself, have proper seat, understood? Don't move randomly!" Gu Na Yan's hands are busy and hurry to pull back Lu Qun's

body who almost fall from the horse, seriously said. If he keeps on joking, he thinks there will a possibility for both of them to fall from horse! He “Xi Yan Gong Zi” doesn’t want to have kind of heroic attempting.

Above the horseback finally back to quiet, only the horse footsteps sound.

Chapter 101

The Way to Long's Manor

After separated with Ye Che, Gu Na Yan is leading by Lu Qun, straightly go to Long's manor.

“What will we do if Little Miss isn't at home? Will we make the Long family become worry because of our coming? Young Master Na Yan, should we just get in by this way?” in front of the Long's manor big door, Lu Qun stops her footstep, thinking what will happen with their coming whether it will be good or bad, suddenly she hesitates.

“It is okay, Wan Er perhaps does not at home. We can change the plan! If, sister Wan Er really doesn't at home, at least they still must know the news! The things should be happened just let it be happened, you don't need to worry, don't you still have me at your side?” Gu Na Yan curved upward his lips.

After Lu Qun seeing the smiles of Gu Na Yan, does not know once again for this time she is choosing just believes on him.

After takes a glances at Gu Na Yan who is beside her showing certainty expression, Lu Qun inhale as much as she could the fresh air, encouraging herself and walking toward the Long's Manor big door, Gu Na Yan is following at her back, together both of them moving forward.

“Master, Madam, Miss, Lu Qun is back.” Xiao Si who is guarding the door, seeing Lu Qun coming far away from the in front door, at sudden very excitedly running to the hall and loudly shouting.

Not long after the shouting voice, immediately group of people come out.

“It seems that people in Long household quite missing you!” in this time Gu Na Yan not forget to say this thing.

Lu Qun backs to her own place, her guts also turned be bigger, forget her

status with Gu Na Yan, turned back she glares Gu Na Yan.

Her footstep is getting faster to the main hall, seeing the familiar faces, Lu Qun eyes getting red. "Master, Madam...Miss, Young Master Leng." Lu Qun is doubted to call Big Miss because Gu Na Yan is there too.

"Lu Qun, why are you coming back? Who is this Young Master?" Long Lao Ye's face isn't look as stern as before, moreover he is looked more compassionate.

"Hello Master Long, Madam Long! I am Gu Na Yan, I am friend of Ye Che who is growing up together." Gu Na Yan introduces himself to Master Long.

"So this is the well known Gu household Young Master. Come, take a seat, take a seat." After Master Long listened to the short introduction of Gu Na Yan, immediately he understands about his status. He is the guest, asking Gu Na Yan to take a seat. "Lu Qun you also have a seat."

"Thank you Master, stills better for me to stand up!" Lu Qun can sense that his Master attitude is changed little bit.

"Young Master Gu, why are you suddenly coming with Lu Qun?" Madam Long who loves her daughter, although she is so worrying that something might happen to Long Mo Er in Ye's manor, but since the outsider is here, her expression stills so compose.

"That's right, Lu Qun, why are you coming back? Does something happen to Wan Er in Ye's manor?" finally Long Wan Er still asking about her suspicion.

Leng Jing Chen is also staying besides waiting for them to answer.

Lu Qun facing four people eyesight, immediately she understood, Little Miss isn't come back here, Little Miss is still missing. Their coming, it just makes Master, Madam, Big Miss and Young Master Leng worry!

Their eyes are filled with expectation; Lu Qun can't take her act.

How must she answer them?

She takes an initiative to depend on Gu Na Yan, secretly looking at him, just want to know his expression, does not expect her eyes just meet Gu Na Yan's eyes, Lu Qun even more panic and lower her head to avoid all the stares.

Chapter 102

Reason

“Master Long, Madam Long, it stills better let me to say it!” Gu Na Yan knows the difficulty of Lu Qun, so he continues.

When he is starting to speak, everyone has turned their eyesight toward him, everyone is worry staring at him. Lu Qun surprised and lifts her head up, she is worrying the result after Gu Na Yan speaks the truth, perhaps the whole Long household might be in chaotic.

“Is it true that something happen to Wan Er?” Long Wan Er is asking Gu Na Yan.

Seeing Lu Qun who is trying to avoid, Long Wan Er is even more certain about her suspicion. She has grown up together with her, she understands very well Lu Qun character, for the normal circumstances, Lu Qun won't act like this, if not because something might happen to Mo Er, why must she stay away from them?

“Young Master Gu, is Wan Er getting trouble in Ye's mansion?” Master Long has made the worst guessing, his beloved daughter is quite naughty and also troublemaker, being quiet and calm really isn't her style, now he just hoping that she won't make any big problem.

“Actually, all of you really no need to worry, this is not counted as big problem.” Gu Na Yan looked all the people faces are so anxious, he is starting to tell about his coming. “Days ago, Ye Che was doing something that anger little sister Wan Er, both of them are get in huff, little sister Wan Er has run away from home, now Ye Che is trying to look for her, so he let us to take a look at Long Mansion, whether sister Wan Er is in here or not.”

“What? This little girl is running away from home?” after Master Long listened to Gu Na Yan explanation, his eyes is glaring widely, “This little girl is more and

more getting unruly, she has married and already become others daughter in law, why stills acting so childish, really not growing up!”

“Young Master Gu Na Yan, why both of them are get in huff? Wan Er is spoiled by us since she was kid! So ridicule.” Madam Long stills composed.

“Sister Wan Er is cute, I do like her character, Madam you are teaching well, she not even showing spoil act. This time really cannot blame sister Wan Er, just blaming Ye Che, all is Ye Che fault, all of you do not need to worry.” Gu Na Yan sincerely said.

“Young Master Gu, just as you said, I rest assured but where did Wan Er that little girl go?” Master Long still showed his worry expression.

“Since sister Wan Er hasn’t come home, I will continue to look for her with Lu Qun, while the Ye manor also still waiting for the news, once we find sister Wan Er we will inform you. Master Long, Madam Long, all of you just rest assured! Sister Wan Er must be at near, she just stills pissed off. Ye Che and I will bring her back safe and sound.” Gu Na Yan stood up, preparing to leave.

“Young Master Gu, Jing Chen and I will go with you to search.” Said Wan Er, asking her to sit at home while waiting, she really can’t do it, she must go to help and look for Mo Er, at this time Mo Er must be heart-aching! She wants to look for Mo Er, she wants to have talked with her, just afraid she might as stubborn as ox. No matter what she really not feeling relieved.

“This?” Gu Na Yan little bit hesitated.

If he brings them with him, how could he explain everything? In front of him is a man who is not speaking for the entire time, although he looks quite calm, but he look is perfectly smart! If really bringing them, how should he explain his rounding words?

“Yes, Young Master Gu, let... Mo Er and Jing Chen go with both of you! On this way we can feel little bit rest assured!” said Madam Long.

“En alright!” after Gu Na Yan thought about it, he smiles and nodded, the things that must be explain still has to be explained.

Going out from Long manor, Len Jing Chen who is standing at beside and keep quiet for this time, seeing Lu Qun and Gu Na Yan, he speaks: “Young Master Gu,

since Wan Er running away from home is Third Young Master fault, why the person who come to look at Long's manor isn't third young master, himself? But why are you, young master Gu? Or there is another thing happened in between? Now the Master and Madam Long aren't here, you and Lu Qun can tell me and Mo Er the entire problem!"

Leng Jing Chen words let Lu Qun and Long Wan Er can't bear to inhale deep air, feeling incredible to look at his direction.

"Jing Chen, what does you mean? Lu Qun, did Wan Er really get in trouble?" Long Wan Er feels something wrong once she heard him, immediately she stops her footstep and turned to pull Lu Qun's arm to ask her.

"Miss, young master Leng, I ..." Again Lu Qun is looking at Gu Na Yan.

"Don't be panic, let listen to young master Gu explanation!" Leng Jing Chen gently appeased Long Wan Er, let her to feel at ease.

"Hehe, young master Leng really is good observant." Gu Na Yan curved up his mouth, smiles to Leng Jing Chen.

He admires him. It seems that his guessed indeed right, this Leng Jing Chen is someone awesome! He takes a glance at the tea shop at the street side, he said: "Let's we sit down, I will explain slowly!"

Chapter 103

Fu Rong is vying

Bai Hua lane is brightly lit and crowded.

Ye Che looking at inside laughing scenery, he even feels more irritating. The one month ago of him, he used to be so freely in here, laughing and talking happily, but after Long Wan Er showed up, all the things had changed and turned to completely confused him. He never came and entered this place anymore, he also does not have that upset mood anymore, and today he comes here, actually his coming because of finding the answer that he is looking for this time.

The state of his current mood really does not need him to think over, he even can straightly tell the important of Mo Er in his heart. Before he thought perhaps because Fei Yan background as prostitute, but she has different aura compare to few others prostitute, understands all the trivial matters in his heart, when he was feeling bad mood she could help him to solve his problem. All of these happened because of the previous trust, unexpectedly this made Mo Er hurt and left, did because he oversight and put his trust in wrong person?

Whenever he thought about Mo Er leaving him, perhaps something might happen, Ye Che eyesight suddenly turned cold. If something really happen to Mo Er, that, Fei Yan, even all of the people in Bai Hua lane must pay ten times.

After he set his determination, the expressionless Ye Che enters Bai Hua lane.

“Aiya! Third Young Master, you are coming to here! Faster come in.” a woman who wearing blazing and gorgeous dresses recognized Ye Che, hurried she welcoming him, extending her hands to hold on his arms, sticking to Ye Che and heading to go upstairs.

“It is real, Third Young Master is coming!”

“Third Young Master, Mu Dan misses you!”

“Third Young Master, have you missed us, you have been too long not coming.”

.....

Group of women are coming to welcome him, at sudden Ye Che has already surrounded by them, Ye Che is feeling loathsome when come in and his expression even colder, he ignores them and his eyesight is looking at upstairs.

The others girl who sensed sudden change on Ye Che expression, tactful they left him.

Finally it only last that beautiful and gorgeous woman who still sticking with Ye Che, perhaps she is not sensed the changes of Ye Che expression, she even bashfully asking. “Third Young Master, who are you looking for? Isn’t good if Fu Rong come to serve you?”

“Where is Fei Yan?” Ye Che is straightly to the main topic.

“Third Young Master, you have been so long not coming here, all of us are missing you so much, how can you keep on thinking Fei Yan? Actually what is so good about Fei Yan? Does Fu Rong can’t compare with her?” Fu Rong expression is changed faster than anyone could do; immediately she showed pity expression, her eyes even moisten. She thought with this kind of weak appearance is able to get Ye Che’s sympathy.

That time was she and Fei Yan who serving Third Young Master together, but Third Young Master treated Fei Yan favorably. What is the difference between her and Fei Yan? Why everyone is choosing Fei Yan over her? Which from her that can’t compare to Fei Yan? From appearance, she Fu Rong is as beauty as Fei Yan, from skill, whatever Fei Yan could do she also can do it. But why still she loses on Fei Yan? She is unhappy!

“Where is Fei Yan?” Ye Che face is darker and avoid Fu Rong hugging, she even almost fall down.

“Third Young Master, you...” after she standing up, Fu Rong angrily roared.

“Third Young Master you are coming ah! Just now quite busy so late to

welcome you, I apologized to Third Young Master!” said Hua Ma Ma happily.

She is showing up in front of Ye Che, talking faster than Fu Rong. “Fu Rong, you take your leave.”

“Ma Ma.” Fu Rong is unhappily acting coquettishly.

“Asking you to take your leave, you just leave.” Hua Ma Ma kept her smile.

“Alright! Leave just leave!” after Fu Rong seeing Hua Ma Ma expression, she cowardly but also not happy left.



I think this time I need to balance among translation projects I have picked. There times I thought alike stepmother for my projects, especially substitute bride which delay too long. Actually, it not because I prefer other projects to this but because I really have hard time to translate this project at my utmost. I want this project translate beautifully, so I carefully using the words and also need double check my grammar so that I won't ruin novel >.<

Although I don't think this novel hard to read and understand but at some point, somewhat it really hard to translate for me.

Alright, let's start...

Enjoy your reading.

Chapter 104

Fei Yan's pain

“Third young master these few days you are less coming here, Fei Yan that girl has got thinner, I am as her Ma Ma seeing her, I do feel heartache.” Hua Ma Ma expression softens.

“Where is she?” towards whatever Hua Ma Ma said, Ye Che does not have big reaction, Hua Ma Ma kind of acting, he had seen many before. Now he only wants to meet Fei Yan quickly, he wanted to be cleared regarding the conversation between she and Mo Er, quickly to find Mo Er to come back.

“She is in her room. Okay, I take Third Young Master to meet her.”

It is still the familiar stairs, the familiar corridor, the familiar room, but at same time it gives a different feeling, his heart not even at peace.

After Hua Ma Ma takes her leave, Ye Che is knocking the room door.

“Come in.”

Walking inside the room, Ye Che strongly can feel that nothing is really changed from the room.

But in some way the round table since when it has changed to square, the scenery of mountain and river screen changed to butterflies screen, the landscape scenery changed to be beautiful and refreshing....but all the changes are too obvious, compare to the last time this is completely different.

How can it change to be like this, but this time Ye Che really does not want to think about it, he just searching for Fei Yan's shadow, he just wants to know answer.

“Ling Ling, is you? Just now the fragrance being sent here is quite good.”

Fei Yan is walking from behind the screen, when she sees Ye Che's back, the fragrance at sudden slips down from Fei Yan's hand, when that white bottle touched the floor, that moment, she feels alike torn body and crushed bones.

That falling sound has regained Fei Yan's attention slowly Fei Yan mouth gives a response.

"Third Young Master, you... how can you at here?"

"What did you say to Wan Er in Wan Nian temple?" There is no slightest warmth from Ye Che's voice.

"Is something happened?"

This is the first time for Fei Yan to see the expressionless Ye Che.

"Why Third Young Master sounded so cold? Is something happened to Wan Er? So that, is this Third Young Master purposed coming here?"

"Have you known that something might happen?" listened to the way of Fei Yan speaking, Ye Che eyesight turned be colder.

"Third Young Master, is it really something happened? What can Fei Yan do to help you?" Fei Yan not really understand what Third Young Master said to her, but stills she very caring asked him.

Third Young Master eyesight is so cold looking at her, as if it could froze her, it is as cold as the winter snow, it makes her could feel the cold all over her body. Actually what is happened? How's thing turned? No matter how Third Young Master never treated her like this before!

Is there any misunderstanding?

"Well, now I want you to tell me honestly, what did you say to Wan Er?" Ye Che not care with Fei Yan feeling, he only wanted to know the answer.

"What was I say to Third Young Madam?" Fei Yan stills not understand, but she is trying her best to understand his meaning.

Ye Che keep on silent, waiting her to give an answer.

"Third Young Master today coming to Fei Yan's place, is because Third Young Madam angry after hearing what Fei Yai said? So that Third Young Master showing up in here?" Fei Yan is carefully to probe.

"Angry? Actually what did you say to Wan Er so that she might angry? What did you say?" Ye Che can't calm down himself anymore, he extends pair of his

hand and grabbed Fei Yan's shoulders, with deep voice he asked.

"I... I didn't say anything, I... I just said that...missing Third Young Master, so that, I... asking Third Young Madam, I...asked Third Young Madam... to take good care of Third Young Master." It is not easy for Fei Yan to say things in her heart under this kind of forces, Ye Che way of speaking, movement, eyesight, for once again it broke her.

"If only these things, only these, why Wan Er could leave without say any words, she disappeared?"

"Third Young Master, you...you think that... Fei Yan... is telling lies?" Fei Yan tears are flowing down because Ye Che does not believe on her. "Fei Yan towards Third Young Master... my heart, Third Young Master... it is not like you don't know. Did Fei Yan... ever lies to Third Young Master? Third Young Master, since this is the case... you don't believe on...Fei Yan?"

Chapter 105

Too Painful

Translated by : Azurro

Proof reading + Edited : Obsidian

“I...” Fei Yan is thinking to herself, how can Ye Che not know?

After all, the peerless talented young lady is crying because of him. Is he making a mistake? Did Fei Yan really do nothing? But where has his Wan Er gone to? What actually happened?

Ye Che is starting to doubt. His hands, which are grabbing Fei Yan’s shoulders, slowly loosen up.

“Where is Wan Er actually gone to?” Under the helpless circumstances, he only sighed.

“Third Young Master, Third Young Madam is missing? How can it be? Fei Yan really said nothing ah!” Seeing Ye Che’s mind-blowing expression, Fei Yan hurriedly grabbed Ye Che’s robe sleeves, asking him.

Ye Che only could stop his sorrowful, silence.

At first he thought Wan Er going missing perhaps has something to do with Fei Yan. He denied Fei Yan is a good person. But at this time when he looks at Fei Yan’s expression, not pretending to be soft, not making things up, and expressing her heart. His heart softens. After all he isn’t someone with a steel-heart. Being able to make Fei Yan to be his closest friend is because he also understands what type of person she is, someone he could favor and happily chat with. To still be able to be such a good girl in the vicissitudes of life shows she is still someone who is worth his trust!

So he should believe Fei Yan one more time!

“Third Young Master, Third Young Madam really is missing because of Fei Yan? Fei Yan really did nothing and also said nothing.” Fei Yan can see Ye Che’s worried and dark tired face. Her heart suddenly feels hurts and also loathing.

The usual Third Young Master is someone who is high-spirited, with immortal good looks, always with the most confident smile. But at this time because Third Young Madam is missing, he looks so soulless. Third Young Madam must be someone special! Or else in these few short days, how could Third Young Master change so drastically to be someone that no one has ever seen before?

Third Young Master must love Third Young Madam very much that he would suspect that Third Young Madam being missing is related to herself. He thinks that Fei Yan is a poisonous girl. He denies his trust in her because Third Young Madam is missing. It naturally becomes that.

But why whenever she thinks about this, she feels like she is suffocating! Is her decision to forget Third Young Master right or not?

But she has told herself to forget him. Why after seeing his familiar face does she still feels pain and is unwilling to part?

Should she set her mind on something that Third Young Master thought about her to face everyone? In his mind she really turned out to be such a poisonous girl?

Heart in pain, immeasurable pain.

Can’t endure. Fei Yan speaks: “Third Young Master is completely in love with Third Young Madam, right! Or else Third Young Master won’t care about having a restless heart. The usual clear and calm Third Young Master worries so much because of this? And also becoming extremely blind, trying anything when in crisis* [*to turn to any doctor one can find when critically ill (idiom)]. Where is the Third Young Master that Fei Yan knows? No matter how hard things are, the old Third Young Master always can solve it to turn out for the best, right? No matter the type of problem that the old Third Young Master faced, he would not have this soulless expression, wouldn’t he? Must you keep on blaming yourself now that the Third Young Madam is not here?”

Although deep inside her heart she has decided to be a woman who will support Third Young Master, she can’t do it. Once she opens her mouth

whatever she said will turn out to be different.

I am back with Substitute Bride translation. Thank you to Obsidian who helped me to do the editing and also grammatical check.

Here I presented....

Chapter 106

Deep Hatred

Words in the heart are one thing but when spoken turns out to be something else!

She could not forever do wicked and evil things; her character is that of a good natured person! So with that kind of character she really is not suitable for Third Young Master. That's why Third Young Madam could be so easily gotten rid of. That's why her fate is to give up, must not put herself high up...

Wouldn't she have her own happiness forever?

Why must she grow up in Bai Hua Lane? Why couldn't she be born into a noble family? Why couldn't she be same as other Misses from noble families?

Before, she never complained and never hated her parents who neglected her. Previously she never complained about the environment that she grew up in. But now from inside her heart "hatred" burst out. This scary word. Telling Third Young Master not to self-pity himself, but now there is "hatred" in her heart. Isn't this is also a form of self-pity?

What matters to her?

"Hatred", this word is scary. She does not want it, forever does not want it!

She uses her strength to shake her head. Fei Yan thought by doing this she could shake those thoughts from her head, but also afraid that her heart is empty.

She tries to forget the empty hole in her heart. Fei Yan focuses her sights on Third Young Master's face. Fei Yan is extending her trembling hands, wanting to get closer to that face. Slowly, slowly getting closer hoping her hands could heal and restore the previous honor. When close to actually touching, she already feels the temperature of Third Young master's face. Suddenly she regained herself, hurriedly she takes back her hands.

Why is she acting like this? She has decided to give up!

She does not want to get hurt even more in the future!

“Third Young Master abilities isn’t limited to this, right? Feng Yan really wishes Third Young Master to be happy, hopes that Third Young Master can grab his own happiness! So Fei Yan takes a decision. Fei Yan wants Third Young Master to leave this place, immediately! If possible, Fei Yan wishes to never see Third Young Master anymore!” Coldly speaking to Third Young Master, Fei Yan turned her back.

Since time immemorial, people in love easily shed many tears. Those who love more are hurt the most!

This is his first time seeing a heartless Fei Yan. Ye Che seems to understand many things! He could not guess the meaning of her expression, Fei Yan who supported him. At this moment Fei Yan isn’t the Fei Yan who he used to know. This Fei Yan is someone who has learned to be strong, different from the weak and delicate Fei Yan in his memory.

This kind of Fei Yan also wills to have her own happiness!

He knows, he understands the meaning of what Fei Yan is doing!

She stilled, that kind-hearted Fei Yan.

He has hurt her too much. Indeed, he won’t appear in front of Fei Yan again. This is the best answer for Wan Er. No matter where Wan Er is, no matter whether she still cares for him or not, no matter whether she will forgive him or not, he will chase Wan Er and bring her back. He will let her stay at his side and won’t allow her to disappear anymore.

Deep apology, deep regrets, deep sorrow seeing Fei Yan pretending to be strong. Ye Che spoke. “Fei Yan, you know me! I hope you also will get your happiness! I take my leave!”

Creak, the sound of the wooden door closing. Silent, Fei Yan’s face is wet with tears.

Fate, is that what separates them?



Picture credit to :Devianart

Translator : Azurro

Grammatical Checker + Edited : Obsidian

Chapter 107

The Injury Gets Slightly Better

After a few days of nourishment, the white robe is already able to move a little bit although limited to this bed. He is able to heal faster all because of Long Mo Er taking meticulous care of him.

When he has a lot of time he thinks that his life has been completely brought back by her. Is his life hers now?

Actually what kind of girl she is? Taking care of him without demanding anything!

He recalled the first time he met her, the way she dressed was different from a girl who is from an ordinary family. And now she is wearing plain clothing. Is it because she is taking care of him! But why did she help him?

Where is her home? Her family?

He stands up, the white robe on his body slowly straightening. He is moving to the table which is not far from there. Although he has been getting better for quite a while, his wounds have not completely healed. A few times his wounds still have slightly hurt.

But after lying too long in bed he really needs to move around a little bit!

He still moves very slowly.

At this time the door sudden opens.

“White robe, why are you up? Are you okay? Do you want to drink water or what? Let me help you get it!” Seeing the movement of the white robe, Long Mo Er calls out, panicking. With the fastest speed she goes to the table’s side. Even faster she puts down the chicken soup that she cooked and hurries to help to support white robe, helping to ease his burden. “If you want to do something then call me. Let me do it for you! You haven’t healed yet. The doctor said many times that you need to rest!”

“I’m much better.” Although Long Mo Er anxiousness stirred white robe’s feelings and some warmth, he still faintly said, “I have been lying in bed for many days. I want to get down and move around a little bit!”

“En.” Long Mo Er is glancing at white robe’s face which is still unaffected from his movement. Nodding her head, she helps support him to walk to the front of the table. His condition now is that he is not yet fully recovered but compared to the big stormy days and nights with a weak pulse and no chance of living, this is much better. “Come, slowly, let us sit down for a while.”

Helping the white robe to sit down, Long Mo Er is pouring the soup into the bowl in front of him. “I just cooked it. Drink it while it’s still warm. This way your body will recover soon! The chicken soup smells good! This is something I learned from my big sister when at home! You are a lucky person, the first to drink it!”

White robe is looking at Long Wan Er’s face which is filled with anticipation after pouring the soup into the bowl for him to drink. The gleam in her eyes makes him unable to refuse. Moreover, he really does not want to refuse. This is the taste of warmth, the taste of family. It’s been so long since he has encountered it that he almost forgets to taste the soup.

Long Mo Er is quietly sitting there, waiting, looking. Seeing the empty bowl, Long Mo Er is filled with happiness.

Remembering the first time, it was so difficult for him to eat two spoons of porridge. Now this moment, the bowl is empty. Her effort is not wasted. He really is come back to life and once again he has the chance to live.

Recalling the time when his life was in danger and death near, and now seeing his vitality that has come back, the changes are a world of difference.

What to say? She really isn’t useless. She brought him back from hell!

Seeing him drinking the soup, her expression is really excited!

108

Grammatical Check and edited by Obsidian

Chapter 108

Sad Injured Spirit (1)

One's own great effort, after saving the person in front of her eyes, saving a life, Long Mo Er felt fully satisfied enveloped in her accomplishment. This is the most meaningful thing that she's done in this life!

Not daring to have the slightest neglect, she now finally can relax. After relaxing her mental state, Long Mo Er gave a tiny yawn.

Just by chance at the right moment, Bai Yin Chen (White robe) raised his head and saw the yawn.

After quite a while he unenthusiastically opened his mouth, "You go rest. I'm fine now." Taking care of a person is very tiring; moreover she was by his side every single moment. Starting from the moment when she saved his life, she must not have had a chance to have a good rest. Now he is better so she can relax.

But what is the real reason that allowed her to look after him for this long? Who is she really? When it's all said and done, why did she do all this? She really is a bit odd. He really wanted to know.

These questions were in the bottom of his heart. He just wanted the answers.

"I'm not tired. My spirits are quite good, extremely good." Knowing that he saw her relax, she dreaded his concern. Long Mo Er showed a little smile. Quickly standing up, she exerted all her strength to stretch her entire body.

Bai Yin Chen (White Robe) laughed.

The look of exhaustion on her face obviously showed. She was unable to hide it even as she tried to be brave.

Pure, kindhearted, unbending, artless.....

What type of a female is she? This question once again emerged in his mind.

Seeing Bai Yin Chen's smile, Long Mo Er knew he wasn't even a little convinced.

Looking at the warm sunshine outside the window, she immediately opened her mouth to speak. "Don't you want to live? I'll help you, support you to take a stroll in the courtyard. This way you'll know that my spirits are still good."

"Eh, OK."

Bai Yin Chen didn't say any more and inclined his head a little.

"If something isn't to your liking, tell me." Long Mo Er supported his arm. Gently and cautiously she led him outside the door.

The warm sunshine gently dispersed, shone on their bodies, very comfortable.

Passing through the baptism of the sunshine, and maneuvering a bit, Bai Yin Chen's face clearly had good color.

"Miss Long, thank you."

"If you could just hurry up and get better, consider that as paying me back. This is the first time in my life that I saved someone whom I met. So if you can strive harder to get well, that will be good." Long Mo Er attentively watched Bai Yin Chen's eyes. It was very solemn, very earnestly spoken.

Seeing her genuinely alarmed eyes, Bai Yin Chen didn't know really know what to say.

Bai Yin Chen spaced out his question. "Miss Long, you've cared for me so many days. Isn't your family worried?"

Familiar with not admitting hardships, his concerned sentence pulled at Long Mo Er's sad injured spirit.

"Bai Yin Chen, I'll help you back to the room. Standing here is not too good." Long Mo Er patiently bore the pain. Not waiting for his answer, she already lent a hand to support him going out.

Bai Yin Chen noticed Long Mo Er's change and her support in going back.

She became angry just because of one sentence about her family.

"You rest. I'll first go out." After finding a good spot for Bai Yin Chen, Long Mo Er walked out dazed, softly closing the door.

Bai Yin Chen completely took in her lonely expression.

She, what will be the outcome?

Chapter 109

Sad Injured Spirit (2)

She thought these past few busy days would allow herself to fundamentally forget her heart ache, allow serene billows to arise in his heart, but unexpectedly no. Bai Yin Chen's face revealed no lessons to be learned.

Heart, her frail heart is starting to ache! Why is peacefulness not even possible?

Is he well?

Has he noticed her disappearance? Is he worried? If he's concerned about her, why aren't people talking about her disappearance? She's stayed here this long and hasn't heard anything about the Ye family searching for her.

How can it be this dead calm?

"Could be it even Lu Qun hasn't noticed that I've disappeared? Then how could Ye Che know?" Thinking this, Long Mo Er immediately denied it and shook her head. Her small voice said, "Impossible, Lu Qun could not have noticed. She would already be extremely anxious! she certainly is extremely ruffled due to my disappearance. Maybe she ran back to the Long household because I disappeared?"

Nervous, Long Mo Er abruptly stood up.

"Heavens, heavens! If it's this way won't father, mother, and also older sister be extremely worried? What to do?" This certainly must have happened. Lu Qun, that idiot, because of Long Mo Er disappearance surely returned to the Long household.

Lu Qun knowing the news of the disappearance means that the Long household also knows. That type of talk definitely turns everything upside down. Lu Qun certainly understands the consequences; she'd better not talk about it!

Should she go back?

She silently saw once again the image of Fei Yan's back. That person, Fei Yan, brought this about. It's her! So her suddenly appearing did this!

No, no, I cannot go back home.

How it is, how is it that she fell in love with Ye Che? But Fei Yan is still in the picture! Long Mo Er really is not a xiao san*! Ye Che never said he likes her! How can she pursue her own happiness? Is it possible to be happy?

**[Xiao san; someone who wrecks a relationship replacing the displaced party.]*

It looks like her desires that she asked for in front of Buddha will not become reality!

Heavens predestined the marriage to be doomed. Ye Che and Fei Yan met first. They were acquainted beforehand. They knew each other before I came along. Why is it that I'm too late? Medicine taken too late does not work. And how would Buddha grant her happiness if it became known that she substituted for her sister?

She deceived everyone!

Going back is certainly a mistake!

She didn't want to be hurt. She didn't dare try to touch the matter once again. She couldn't stand the idea of herself intervening and allowing beautiful Fei Yan to lose her radiance! Having the memories of Ye Che ought to be enough!

"I should be satisfied with the memories!" in this way, Long Mo Er didn't stop talking to herself, attempting to eliminate the central pain sneaking into her thoughts.

"Wait, when Bai Yin Chen is better I want to learn how to save people like him. I certainly want to do this type of meaningful work." Long Mo Er silently shed tears.

Home, the Ye family, will again think about them afterward!

She hopes for the time being that father, mother, and older sister have not heard the news about her disappearance.

Ps: Today I will post one chapter of ANSTG.

Stay tune

Chapter 110

迷*

Still continuing doing the same actions over a few days, Long Mo Er walks inside the small room to serve (food) dishes.

Bai Chen Yin is silently sitting in front of the dining table, blankly staring. Wearing that silver mask, his expression is staring far away however not losing the connection (with the current situation). It is easy for Long Mo Er to sense something odd as normally he wouldn't act this way. She's never seen him so easily preoccupied.

Is it because of the wounds in his body, or other things? She's always curious about his face inside that silver mask, why actually must he wear this mask? Does he look ugly or is his appearance ruined?

He is someone mysterious!

His appearance is coincidence and at the same time so enigmatic! The first time her mind was really interested with his background, all because of his medical skill. Although he said everyone knows the way he saves lives, she still really admires him. Because she does not know anything she wants to learn! The path she must walk is long!

And then when she sees that beautiful silver mask that he wears, she feels a little bit more curious about him! She never thought when praying at the temple that she would coincidentally encounter him again. By that time, he was so weak and she was so surprised with how he showed up. Actually when rushing to leave the lake, she really had forgotten him. She thought that she would not encounter him anymore so things faded away in her memory. But they both encountered each other again.

Fate is something mysterious!

How mysterious he is? Truly she really wants to know, really wants to understand!

She had decided in her heart that he is the third mystery person in her life.

Of course the first person is Big Brother Leng. With his impressive appearance, awesomely deciding to spend his entire life (with Big Sister), knowingly making promises, it makes Long Mo Er envious but also admires all of them. She only can smile sweetly when thinking about Big Sister and Big Brother Leng's story. Both of them are so persistent and work hard for success. Now it really makes one feel their happiness as well as be envious.

While of course, the second is a person who lets her heart ache.

Whenever she thinks about it, Long Mo Er eyes dim.

That time before they met, Ye Che was someone legendary, mysterious, able to raise above criticism. That time when they met in the street, he was helping her. That time, his domineering heartlessness, his changing mysteriousness, his gentleness, beautiful eyes...

Everything is so sweet and heartless.

There have been so many changes. Ye Che strangely is someone who lets her love but also not someone she dares to love!

Ignoring the hurt in her heart, Long Mo Er doesn't want to keep thinking as the pain is so clear. Her gaze comes back to the present. The future is still a puzzle. It's bizarre that he showed up, bizarre to wear a mask, bizarre to have a body full of wounds and scars. It's more than enough that he is a legend, becoming her third amazing person.

It seems everyone has their own story, moreover all are so amazing and able to make others envious and also touched. What is the hidden story behind him? She is really expectant, expectant for him to tell it.

The mysterious and splendid story of everyone's life, does she have this kind of story? Her status, her secret regarding the Ye family, her and Ye Che's story, could all of this be told like the differences with the others? If yes then she still wants more marvellous tales, to become even more different than the three persons she's encountered, become more exciting and also mystical. In this ways

he will feel satisfied, satisfied enough to forget all the pain in her heart!

Note:

*] 迷 Mi : This single Chinese character has many meaning. such as:

- be confused; lose one's way; be fascinated by; indulge in; fan; enthusiast; a surname; fiend

This Chapter 迷 at least has two meaning 'fascinated' and 'lose one's way'

111

Translated by : Obsidian

Chapter 111

First Laugh

A trace of melancholy appeared on Long Mo Er's face.

She hopes she will embrace many beautiful stories, hopes that for a very long time afterward each day will be unordinary and different, becoming another persons' marvelous story.

"Bai Yin Chen, what's the matter?" Long Mo Er asked in a soft voice.

The sudden sound of the voice made Bai Yin Chen turn his head around toward Long Mo Er who was behind him. His eyes brightened some, unlike the dull spirit a moment ago.

After sitting down, Long Mo Er again asked, "Bai Yin Chen, what were you thinking just now?"

"You saved me, moreover after this long you are still calling me using my formal name. The feeling is very strange."

"He, he, then I'll call you big brother Bai. I'm just used to that manner of speaking, that's all. I'll simply call you big brother Bai! You can call me Mo Er. That will be just fine." Long Mo Er attractively smiled.

"Eh." giving a promise using a slight nod of the head.

"Big brother Bai. He, he."

It's already been a long time since anyone was this personal when addressing him. Before, his little sister always had this sort of sweet little smile when opening her mouth, ethereally calling him big brother. But those days have already left him forever. Is his own little sister alright? She ought to be like Mo Er who is in front of his eyes, the same type, the sort of person whom people are naturally fond of. Right now his sister also is the age where the next step is to

marry. After Mo Er began to be close, his longing for his own family was naturally evoked. The memories of their faces easily came to him, remembering their warm and smiling expressions. They ought to be all well! Now it dawned on him that originally he did not clearly and distinctly recall their appearance. Furthermore he couldn't forget.

“Hey, yoo-hoo.”

“Ah!” Long Mo Er waved her hand in front of Bai Yin Chen eyes. He realized his prior absent-mindedness.

Did Mo Er appear because May 15th is getting closer and closer?

“Big brother Bai, what's with you today? Where are you uncomfortable?” Thinking of that possibility, Long Mo Er's worried eyebrows raised a little.

Taking in Long Mo Er's distressed expression, Bai Chen Yin stood up knocking her head with his hand, afterward slightly smiled and sat down again.

“Wa, that hurts!” Long Mo Er blurted out. Because of his action, she used her hand to cover the spot where he knocked. “Why did you knock on my head? I have been this concerned about you and you unexpected retaliate? ”

“He, he!” Bai Chen Yin gave a big laugh.

“Still laughing! Looking at me this way, you're still laughing!” Hearing the sound of Bai Chen Yin's loud laughter, Long Mo Er pouted slightly angry.

Bai Chen Yin seeing her happy self, couldn't help but doubt whether his own task a moment ago was that important? Moreover, it has been a very long time since he felt that close to anyone, Mo Er's sudden appearance, unexpectedly being thoroughly concerned for his welfare, seeing her concerned face. He believes using this small practical action will help drive away her anxious face, that's all. He wants to let her know that he is already a lot better, that's all. The thought of her happy adorable expression let him heartily laugh, that's all.....

Never thought that.....

Chapter 112

Conspiracy

Translated by : Obsidian

Could it really be he was that heavy handed? Getting up he walked over to her. He used his hand to rub the place that he knocked on a moment ago.

Thinking aloud, “Was it really that serious? I was joking with you, that’s all.” Bai Yin Chen carefully studied the spot saying, “Strange, it’s good that there’s no mark!”

Feeling the slightly trembling body under his hand becoming more and more terrible, trying hard to patiently bear something, Bai Yin Chen realized he was duped, deceived. The hand that originally rubbed her head, again heavily knocked on it. “Little girl, you actually deceived me!”

“Wa, big brother Bai. Does it mean because I fooled you that you should bully me like this? Really hurts!” Again Long Mo Er pursed her eyebrows.

Hearing Bai Yin Chen’s happy laughter while making fun of her, Long Mo Er was both surprised and happy. Naturally she wanted him to continue to make fun of her as it let his heart be happy, therefore she used a little strategy to deceive him.

This was his first time laughing this loud, able to laugh aloud without restraint! Was she laughing like this a moment ago? But it let him be this happy. She had a little doubt! If it’s really very funny, she actually doesn’t mind. She just wants him to be able to laugh. Under his white mask a small pleasant smile was raising.

Each time she was only being able to judge his mood and expression from the outside of his mask, assessing his spirits by his exposed skin. The first time seeing him, she also had a very hard time determining his frame of mind by seeing the corners of his mouth and him picking up his head. Under the mask, what is his

face actually like? Is he this mysterious toward everyone? Is his face cover hard to bear? Uncomfortable?

“Big brother Bai, your knocking makes me sore. I want revenge!” Long Mo Er’s two eyes tightly glared at him.

“Want revenge? What sort of revenge?” The corner of Bai Yin Chen’s mouth lifted into a smile as he opened his mouth to ask Long Mo Er.

“I will not talk with you anymore. I will ignore you. After bullying me like this, will not speak to you.” Long Mo Er’s mouth continued to pout, nevertheless her heart was happy while waiting for Bai Yin Chen to walk into the trap.

“Ignore me? This severe? If you ignore me then there will be no one to pay attention to me! OK. I apologize. I apologize. OK?” The corners of Bai Yin Chen’s mouth were still raised in a smile.

“OK, you say you want to apologize!” Long Mo Er’s expression was calm and collected. She was happy, inwardly smiling.

“Eh.”

“If you’re going to apologize then it has to be in good faith!”

“Eh.” Continuing to nod his head, Bai Yin Chen discovered Long Mo Er’s laden meaning and wanted to see what she was thinking.

“Big brother Bai, will you let me see your face under the mask? Can I see what your face truly looks like?” Long Mo Er’s face didn’t have the prior energetic look. There was some slight annoyance while looking at Bai Yin Chen, afraid he will open his mouth to refuse.

Hearing Long Mo Er’s question, Bai Yin Chen blankly stared.

Fundamentally she’s curious about his face!

But let her see his face? If she sees it, what then? This mask was already with him these long two years. His face has been hidden for two years. Can hidden things be this easy to peel back? That way won’t he continue to ache?

Real things which always will be grim, scare people.

Bai Yin Chen calmly considered as his hand lightly stroked the mask, feeling the

icy outer covering.

113

Grammatical check and Edited by : Obsidian

Chapter 113

Days of memories

“Big Brother Bai, how about it? Can you let me see!” Long Mo Er sees him doubting, not really sure about the question. Following this, her heart is moved.

Actually the other person hiding something must have his own reason to do so. The memories inside must harbor some bitter feelings which she cannot imagine pouring inside. She does not like peeling (open) matters which have been long hidden. It's as if she is doing something wrong. Is she not being an understanding person? Will she look like a bad person?

“Mo Er, I...”

Without waiting for Bai Yin Chen to finish his words, Long Mo Er is already smiling, hesitatingly cutting him off. “Big Brother Bai, actually I'm just curious. That's all. There is no obligation to let me look. You don't need to mind my words. I just feel bored, nothing to do! Hehe. Actually hiding Big Brother Bai's real face like this is also not bad. This way it gives me a feeling of mystery, quite great!”

Long Mo Er really does not want to forcefully ask. This lets Bai Yin Chen feel relieved.

The reason for this concealment is one among many reasons. There also must be something more between hidden secrets and the concealing mask. The mask on his face is being used to protect himself. The mask is only a shell. Perhaps his heart is still unprepared so things are difficult to say.

He is covered in debt and still hasn't finished paying what is owed. He is unable to take off the mask and also does not have the mood to bear the burden.

May 15th is coming near. How must he actually end the pain in his heart?

He still is not giving up, yet he has disappointed many people. He owes many things. Two years of time, he's been roaming Da Jiang Nan Bei as if in a rather long dream. But during this spring season, he still arrived here. He forever

cannot let things go. When his heart will be able to be peaceful?

Actually the mask is heavy. The weight is not something he can bear; The weight is something that vicissitudes his entire body. His heart is tired, already wearied! When can his burden lift?

“Big brother Bai, big brother Bai.”

Seeing Bai Yin Chen absent-minded once again, Long Mo Er knows she has brought up the topic she mustn't talk about.

That mask must hide a huge burden, something that she cannot understand. It must be many things. How can she be so ruthless to mention it? If at this moment her big sister was here, she would dislike Long Mo Er stupidly talking about something that hurts others. How can she this stupid, talking about vexatious topics! When will she be smarter like her big sister? No, doing so would only be half as smart than her big sister!

Why does she always make mistakes?

She is really stupid!

“Mo Er, how many days are left before May 15th?” Bai Yin Chen faintly asked Long Mo Er. To Long Mo Er it sounds far from her, very far away.

Not understanding why Bai Yin Chen asked, Long Mo Er extends her hand starting to count. She has stayed here about 12 days taking care of Bai Yin Chen. She left the Ye mansion on May 1st which leaves two days before May 15th. With her departure, she has disappeared this long.

He glances, seeing her melancholy heart. Long Mo Er speaks honestly to Bai Yin Chen about the day.

“After all it has been so long!” Sadly speaking, Bai Yin Chen is showing as if he has lived outside of the world.

“Big brother Bai, what is May 15th? Is it very important?” Long Mo Er tilted her head, straight away looking at Bai Yin Chen's expression.

But Bai Yin Chen does not hear her voice, still drowning in his own thoughts.

Two days, so there's only two days left, after all the time is two days left. Bai Yin Chen sighed. Time flies. Knowing that day is still drawing near, though he

never thought that his wounds would allow him to have rest for a few days.

“Mo Er, I will leave immediately. I must go someplace.”

114

Grammatical check and Edited by : Obsidian

Chapter 114

After listening to this, without waiting for Bai Yin Chen's reaction, Long Mo Er is already jumping up. She pulls tightly on Bai Yin Chen's robe sleeves, nervously shouting out loud.

"What, you say you want to leave? You say you want to go now? Don't you know that the wounds in your body just healed, after all (this) you say you want to leave?"

"Mo Er, I must go somewhere. I don't have any more time." Bai Yin Chen still calmly spoke.

"Big brother Bai, where are you going? The time you mentioned, is it May 15th? Actually what is the importance of that date and also that place? Is it important?" Long Mo Er is concerned about Bai Yin Chen, but the way she is speaking turns out to be pursuing.

"That's right, it's very important. Although I almost lost my life, I must go. I must hurry." Bai Yin Chen looks at Long Mo Er, his eyes so persistent and certain.

Stunned, she looks at the kind of eye expression. Although the silver mask covers things up, Long Mo Er can see those eyes. She knows the face concealed by the mask is equally determined and firm.

Long Mo Er comes back to herself. Her glossy pearl lips say, "Well, Big brother Bai, you should go! I believe the thing that Big Brother Bai wants to do must be something important. I hope Big Brother Bai will smoothly complete this matter. But I hope Big Brother Bai will also promise me one thing."

After listening to Long Mo Er and knowing that she understands, Bai Yin Chen's expression is nice and warm. "Mo Er, what thing do you want me to promise you?"

"I want to go with you."

Bai Yin Chen is dumbfounded for a while.

"I don't have a place to go and Big Brother Bai also wants to leave this place.

Since I don't know where to go I hope that Big Brother Bai will take me along. Let me go with you to the place that you are heading to, can I? I promise to be obedient." Long Mo Er spoke, her spirits low.

She never thought that Bai Yin Chen is going to leave, so she really does not know where she will go. Everyone has their own place; everyone has their own home. This time she is so lonely. After all she has a home but cannot there. Where should she go? She is so confused. Now (here) the only person she knows is Bai Yin Chen. If he also leaves, then what should she do? It is impossible to go home. She's afraid to get hurt. She can only beg Bai Yin Chen to take her with him. Now she only has one option, to ask him to take her with. After everything, there is still a day where she doesn't know where to go? How can this be?

Feeling hurt, her heart is crying though unable to voice any words.

"Mo Er, we are going to leave now." said Bai Yin Chen.

These words, it feels like it's decided. Long Mo Er happily lifts her head up, looking at him she happily smiles. "Okay, thank you Big Brother Bai. I will be good."

"En, let's pack the stuff and then we'll leave." Just now Long Mo Er looked so down. Her spirit is so low that his heart also hurts. What is her background? Usually naive and cute, she always smiles. Why is she showing such a sad and scared aura?

He falls silent. How can he refuse and say no? Moreover she is so kind that he cannot say no. Regardless, he also doesn't have a reason to refuse. She gave him his life back, to once again be able to live. Take her to that place. There is nothing that cannot be done.

115

Translated by: Obsidian

Chapter 115

As if thinking of something, Long Mo Er hastily opens her mouth saying to Bai Yin Chen, “Big brother Bai, I’m going out for a bit. I’ll immediately come back. When I’m back then we’ll leave.” Without giving Bai Yin Chen a chance to speak, Long Mo Er goes out like the wind disappearing, from the room leaving Bai Yin Chen looking at the trace of her clothes.

Hurrying, Long Mo Er runs toward the large street. Deeply afraid that Bai Yin Chen will lose her, she uses both hands to lift her long skirt. Using all her effort to dash, not even a moment, Long Mo Er arrives at the place she wants to be.

Standing by the hanging sign, “Pawn”, which is by the pawn shop door, Long Mo Er takes big mouthfuls gasping for breath. After easing her tension, Long Mo Er walks into the shop. The original memories coming to mind, she directly walks to the sales counter finding the shop keeper there.

“Shop keeper, do you still remember me?”

The proprietor sitting inside upon hearing the words lifts his head. Seeing Long Mo Er, he searches his memory for details. “Oh, it’s you. I remember. A short time ago you pawned your pearl hairpin here. Right. You’re that young miss.” After remembering, the shop keeper pats the table.

“Thank you shop keeper. Thank you that you still remember me.” Long Mo Er appreciative that the shopkeeper didn’t forget, almost gratefully wept bitter tears.

“Now Miss, today you came back to redeem your pearl hairpin?” The shop keeper’s whole appearance is a smile. Seeing this sort of beautiful young girl at this post is very rare. This let him forget which isn’t that easy.

“No, I” Facing the proprietor, Long Mo Er swallows a little, her voice quiets down.

“Miss, have you come to redeem the item?”

“No, though” Long Mo Er’s voice gets even smaller.

“Then miss you are...?” the proprietor really didn’t understand her purpose in coming. A pawn shop fundamentally is just a place to pawn items and to prove things[1]. This sort of young lady is not the type of customer they see. He still really did not understand why she came there.

[1] Prove things such as is this item very pale jadeite or perhaps soapstone.

“Boss, I have to leave this hairpin. But my hope, I hope you certainly will help me protect this hairpin. I will definitely return to retrieve it. I hope you can promise me. Please, I really will come back and redeem it. Boss can you promise me, OK?” Speaking, the edge of Long Mo Er’s eyes are somewhat red.

It’s all her fault, that was what Mother Ye gave her. She went as far as to pawn it. That item indeed represents all of Mother Ye’s kind regards towards her. That is everything the Ye family bestowed her! If, if it were not for Big Brother Bai then she would not have exchanged it for money. Big Brother Bai’s life is more important than a pearl hairpin, isn’t it?

But, why is she this sad! It seems she let everyone down!

She is really feeling sad!

“Eh, miss, I cannot promise you anything.” The shop owner opens his mouth and sighs.

“Shop owner, I certainly will return. You have to believe me! I beg you to truly believe me!” Long Mo Er worryingly opens her mouth and sobs a little.

“Miss. We open our doors to do business. We are unable to give this type of guarantee to every customer. From the beginning, since we’ve opened our doors to do business we’ve had numerous customers. Miss, don’t cry!” The shop owner is somewhat panicky seeing Long Mo Er’s tears. “There, there! Miss, if you do not return in ten days then there’s nothing I can do. After ten days some people from our capital will come to take every pawned article. At that time the items will be taken to the capital and handled there. Therefore, Miss, if you really want to redeem it then you must hurry back within 10 days.

“Eh. OK. Thank you shop owner. Thank you.” Long Mo Er’s hands clumsily wipe the tears on her face. The corners of her eyes again exposes a little smile.



Translated by Obsidian

Chapter 116

Questions And Doubts

That moment (while Long Mo Er is) hurrying back to the medicine shop, Bai Yin Chen is already waiting for her at the entrance to the large street.

From far way, that towering smear of white can be seen in the distance. Long Mo Er's footsteps stop. Extending her hands, she uses her sleeve to rub her face, exerting all her strength to straighten out the mood she was in a moment ago. She's just afraid her facial expression will reveal her frame of mind, afraid Bai Yin Chen will see her difficulties.

Taking a deep breath through her nose, Long Mo Er works hard to make the corners of her mouth lift. "Big brother Bai, I'm fine now, let's go!"

Bai Yin Chen's gaze lingers on Long Mo Er and after a while he shifts his gaze. His face is serious but he says nothing. Just slightly nodding his head toward her, he walks forward.

"Doctor, good-bye. We're going now." Long Mo Er finishes the (farewell) greeting with a small smile. She immediately chases and catches up to Bai Yin Chen.

Part of her is full of excitement. After leaving home, this is her first real introduction to the world outside. What sort of things will she discover following big brother Bai? What sort of things will befall her? Big brother Bai knows how to save people so on the road big brother Bai can continually teach her about that, right? She can learn a lot of things!

Big brother Bai was saving people before meeting her. This time she met him and even saved him. How did he get the wounds on his body? Who did he offend? Did he encounter a robber? A bandit? How can there be someone that cruel to want his life? This hidden story about him is a bit much, isn't it?

Straightening her head, Long Mo Er's thoughts continually turn round and round. Many questions come out, all letting her think about opening her mouth.

But she didn't know how to open her mouth as these questions are not all hers to initiate.

"Say it. What do you want to know?" Bai Yin Chen felt Long Mo Er's assessing gaze. Her facial expression completely reveals the concerns on her heart.

From her return just a moment ago, he actually discovered that she's off-putting. Her red eyes let him feel heart ache and her strong smile let him be a bit unrestrained. Despite this he didn't know how to help her. Did she suddenly discover something?

On the road he continually assesses her, repeatedly evaluates her. Usually her words are profuse so now he is actually unaccustomed to her quietness. It's all good being able walk along on the road while gauging her.

She hoped this side of her would fully satisfy his doubts. On her small face is clearly written that she has questions and problems. Still under the impression that she can conceal her thoughts, she stares at the expression in his eyes and couldn't help herself anymore. It's best to open his mouth bring it up and ask her.

"No, nothing! I have no questions!" Long Mo Er's heart jumps upon hearing Bai Yin Chen's words. She shakes her head in denial.

How can big brother Bai so easily see through her? How can he know she has problems? Big brother Bai is awesome! But she doesn't know if after bringing up the topic to big brother Bai whether he'll think that she is very bothersome. Maybe he won't want to take her along (anymore). To avoid being cast away, even if she was killed she still wouldn't admit it. Big brother Bai now is considered her support and close relative. She really did not want to think about a certain person.



Edited by: Obsidian

Chapter 117

The Source of Pain

“Say what you want to ask, just ask! No need to worry that I’ll be angry as I’ve promised to bring you along. I won’t leave you (behind) unless you choose to leave me. I won’t leave you alone.” Jokingly, Bai Yin Chen looks at her.

“Really? Big Brother Bai, this is what you said! You said you’d bring me along! You cannot go back on your word!” Long Mo Er is jumping, happily stretching her hands holding Bai Yin Chen’s wrist while happily jumping up and down in place.

“That’s right, I won’t go back on my own words.” He never thought this simple promise would give her such satisfaction. Only one promise enables her to forget her sadness, exposes her real smile. She is really a naive girl, such an easily satisfied little girl. “What were you thinking before? Do you have any questions for me? Ask!”

“He he!” Scratching her head, Long Mo Er feels shy. “Big Brother Bai you are so smart, you know everything.”

Bai Yin Chen smiles but says nothing.

“That, I want to ask why were you injured!” Long Mo Er’s eyes are brightly flashing, looking curiously at him.

“Just asking about this one matter? Why didn’t you ask before? Are you really afraid that I will leave you? Dummy little girl!” This matter, never thought about such a simple matter. Bai Yin Chen thought she wanted to ask something about his mask, although now if she really wants to know the story behind his mask then he will also honestly tell her.

He had thought about it; he will take her to that place. He also acquiesced about letting her know. In two days she will found out about this matter. But he just did not realize that he had relented. After seeing her eyes redden, he realized he also has heartache and so actually could not refuse her demand. So

there was no need to hide it anymore!

One person has shouldered it for two years, perhaps like others he should let it out so he won't be this tired. Perhaps the feeling will be much better. Also Mo Er this naive and simple little girl really cares about him. It gives a feeling of family, a feeling that he hasn't had for a long time. Can he still hide it from her?

"Actually regarding my injury, I encountered someone with high martial arts skills. I met him when he was injured. I helped but in the process of treating him discovered his real identity and then..."

The two persons are talking while walking. After listening, Long Mo Er startles. At one point she nervously grasps Bai Yin Chen's robe. One time she sighs.

"Never thought his real identity was... Fortunately he did not come back to check or else you would have died. It allowed me to help you. Lucky big brother Bai, later if we encounter him then I will help you get revenge. He's really evil." Ill-affected, Long Mo Er was not convinced it was worth doing for Bai Yi Chen.

"Silly little girl, I almost died in his hands. How would you help me to get revenge? Do you have the ability to get revenge?"

"That's right I don't. Then what should we do?"

"What to still do? Of course let it be! We were surprised. This lets us know to be careful next time. If a sincere heart can be used to melt that kind of person who is used to having one's way then it would be better. But I didn't do that. You also must be careful; don't help others at random."

"Don't help people at random? How can that be? How can I that hard-hearted? If I don't save other people at random then I would not have helped you. Then how could you stand here now?"

"Ha ha, that's right."

"Mo Er you are a really kind person."

"Everyone says I'm like that, ha ha!"

.....

The sunset elongates the shadows of two people.



Somewhat I feel so sorry for Substitute Bride readers, I have delayed this project progress too long, I know it. I try to keep my pace to up-dating at least one chapter every week.

Chapter 118

The 15th of May

The 15th of May, this painful memory still remains and also a day that cannot be forgotten.

Forever he would not forget this day. On this day he lost everything he had and also needed to shoulder everything. Those days two years ago, he was so cheerful and happy. But in the end he didn't have anything. (It all) disappeared, left to shoulder everything by himself, this thing that made him accept it alone.

Why? Why does heaven want him to experience all these things?

Did he do something wrong in his previous life? Because of that he cannot be happy for the rest of his life?

Again stepping on this small path, Bai Yin Chen's every foot step is so heavy while his mood is indescribable. His heart is always so sad every time he walks closer to this place.

It makes him not know what to do!

"Big brother Bai, is this here the place that you always want to come to?" The surroundings are wrapped by a green river and blue mountains, fragrant flowers, and grasses. This indeed a good place. Although the surroundings are so great, Long Mo Er still does not understand why Bai Yin Chen has to choose the 15th of May to come here. Also coming here for fresh air is weird!

She has been following Bai Yi Chen for some time. Bai Yin Chen is (now) firmly standing, pausing. Long Mo Er follows Bai Yin Chen's eyesight. Looking over there, she just realizes that in front of them is a grave stone. She walks two steps closer. On the surface of that grave stone clearly written in bright red, deeply engraved, "Beloved Wife Lin Ling Grave".

Who was this Lin Ling? Suddenly as if realizing the source of burden which Bai Yin Chen shoulders, the person inside was someone big brother Bai knew?

So the place that he said is important is here.

Who was this person? Big brother Bai feels sad because of this person so their relationship must be not simple!

On the surface is written beloved wife, these two words. Could it be the person who lying inside underneath is big brother Bai's wife?

Big brother Bai lost his most beloved person! So the person laying inside.....

She never thought that big brother Bai is someone who already had a wife. Moreover, she had not thought that big brother Bai's wife Everything in front of her eyes is too shocking for her! After calming down for some time, she finally comes to slowly react.

Finally she understands what day is the 15th of May. No wonder big brother Bai said although he must lose his life that he still wanted to come here. Big brother Bai must love his wife so much. What kind of love it is?

Big brother Bai's face is covered with a mask. Moreover, this moment he is completely drowning in his own world. The half exposed face did not let her completely guess what kind of expression that he now has. Only the so real miserable aura that radiates from his body can be felt.

One of his hands is bracing the tombstone on top, then there is a careful gentle rubbing movement by that hand. She can sense that big brother Bai really has deep feelings toward his wife. Actually what sort of feeling is it?

Could it be that big brother Bai concealing his face is related to this Sister Lin!

But, why? Why did sister Lin die?

Is it because of sister Lin's death that big brother Bai now uses a mask to disguise himself?

Long Mo Er cannot completely understand the feeling of being left by the person one loves the most.

She's been separated from Ye Che this short time and feels indescribably hurt. Because of Fei Yan, Long Mo Er chose to escape in order to protect herself. What sort of feeling would it be, being separated by death? It absolutely must be a thousand times more painful compared to her pain! What kind of burden is big brother Bai actually shouldering alone? What kind of obstacle did the two of

them face?

Shock, pity, helplessness, regret, sympathy, hurt....

Long Mo Er really not cannot understand what kind of complicated feeling she has. She feels big brother Bai who is standing in front of her is someone strong, someone that she admires, someone who is a hundred times braver than her.

So much so that if the love story in front of her is something beautiful and great then her love toward Ye Che seems so small and unworthy to bring up at all. As if a little coward, she will always be this coward.



This is the latest post which translated by Obsidian before her absent. So, starting next chapter, I will do the translation by myself until Obsidian back from her break.

Chapter 119

His Face

Standing in front of the gravestone silently accompanying Bai Yin Chen, Long Mo Er again continued to not open her mouth. Standing by the side of Bai Yin Chen, steadily quietly behaving, Long Mo Er did not know how to talk to him to support him. As a result she just stood by his side accompanying him.

“Mo Er, haven’t you all along been really wanting to know what my face under the mask truly looks like?”

Bai Yin Chen unexpectedly opened his mouth. “Ah?” The unanticipated words completely dumbfounding Long Mo Er. She mistakenly was thinking that she misheard.

“I know you really want to know what I look like under the mask. This moment I can satisfy your intention.” Bai Yin Chen’s hand which was on the gravestone a long time, left the stone, his face mask turning upwards.

In Long Mo Er’s big shocked eyes, Bai Yin Chen used his hands to take off the silver colored mask, nothing whatever blocking his face directly facing Long Mo Er, watching her.

Shocked, Long Mo Er opened wide her mouth, her pupils dilated, not blinking an instant, tenaciously looking at Bai Yin Chen’s face.

That face is indescribable, clean handsome, thick pitch-black brows, charming bright eyes, profound round nose, small as well as thin lips. The contour of the entire face is gentle, fine and exquisite, just as if sketched in ink (by an artist).

What Long Mo Er saw completely obliterated her ideas as she didn’t expect Bai Yin Chen would be this handsome. What she formerly thought and what she now saw were worlds apart. She mistakenly thought his face was destroyed so he hid his appearance in this way.

“What? Mo Er? Your current expression shows you’re frightened?” Bai Yin Chen didn’t understand the meaning of the expression that Mo Er displayed.

“Ah, no, no!” Long Mo Er eyes now kept blinking, shut up her mouth which had published her astonishment.

“Mo Er, I have a story. Are you interested in hearing it? Mo Er gazed at Bai Yin Chen’s face which was looking back again toward the grave, again toward that far place.

“Oh! OK!” Long Mo Er was still soaking in Yin Chen’s appearance. A bit shocked, Long Mo Er’s reaction was a little slow. “Bai Yin Chen, you go ahead and talk. I’ll listen.”

“Two years before that spring, at that time you can say I was clearly not a child anymore. At that time I just knew myself to be happily living everyday with my family, going the store accompanying my father and big brother doing everything for the business. Every day was ordinary and simple things, in those days’ life was soft and sweet because there were no difficulties and no hardships.” As if going back to that original time, Bai Yin Chen’s face was full of simple satisfaction, gentle and content.

“There was a bright and beautiful day where I went very early to the store to help out. After a full day of hustle and bustle, I was incredibly tired, short-tempered hurriedly returned home. As luck would have it, I came across her on the main street. Perhaps it was destined by the heavens or maybe it was karma, we became wonderfully acquainted in that way.”

Long Mo Er was silently listening. She felt amazement hearing Bai Yin Chen’s story from his own mouth. Expectantly waiting and listening caused her to be emerge touched about this matter.

“After she and I met, after coming into contact with her, I discovered she is a kind-hearted girl like water, her hearts’ detailed thinking makes you feel moved. Every time she met me during my difficult times, she was by my side accompanying me. She would with her own hands embroider beautiful little bags for me, personally working under the lamp without resting for a good number of days stitching clothes, making shoes. We made a solemn pledge of love without our parents’ approval.” Saying this here, Bai Yin Chen every part of his face shown a strange radiance.



Chapter 120

The Love That Beyond Life and Death

Although Bai Yin Chen is perfectly so calm down and simple when talking about that matter, Long Mo Er could see from his eyes which filled with many loving

feeling, understand those things such as lovers pledge of eternal loyalty until the seas dry up and rocks decay (lover vows) isn't something simple as she thought, it must absolutely include the promise of lifetime warm vowing.

“Both of us had been at the step of Man must marry to while woman must get married with. But when I brought her went to my home, happily telling my family member that I wanted to marry her, I thought my family would have agreed with me, I thought all of them were understanding me, I thought all of them would like her as I do..... But, I was mistaken, my mistake was too foolish. My family after all disagreed, they even were not disagreed with our marriage.” Bai Yin Chen's eyesight is little bit scary, but at same time arises other worries.

“Why were they not disagree?” Long Mo Er also feels worry regarding their relationship.

“At the very early of our relationship, my family had already known, had found out, so that very soon they were looking people to investigate everything about her. When they were doing their investigation they found out that since she was small she had already had sickness, her body wasn't so healthy, she was born and belonging to have low temperature body, little bit chill could make her caught a cold, and perhaps would take her life. The fortune teller ever helped to foresee her fate, said that she would not be able to live until her twenty years old. So that, my family was so opposing, opposed both of us to stay together.” Bai Yin Chen keeps on enduring, took a deep breathe and kept on continuing.

“My family was looking for her and bringing up the matter about family background as reason at my back, they told her that I had already had married arrangement with other girl, immediately going to get marry with the woman

who matched with my family background, told her that I was not sincere toward her, telling her that I was still so young and only fooling around with her feeling only. I was being grounded by my family, powerless only staying inside my room, I had done many to protest, I thought by doing so, my family could understand the loving feeling between both of us. But, it actually made them to move faster step. Because of me, they were looking a woman who wanted to marry with me, discussing about the marriage matter in front of her. She didn't see me, and she was starting to doubt and denial the persistent feeling between us, and finally with her broken heart she left me.”

Stretched out hands, Bai Yin Chen makes fist from his hand and then hit on the tomb stone. A moment, the fresh blood is dripping down to the tomb stone, but Bai Yi Chen as if not realized of it, doesn't care and just let it flowing down.

“Big Brother Bai, what happen to you? Is it hurt or not? With your current conditions, if Sister Lin Ling saw it she would be very sad, very sad, she would not want to see you like this!” Long Mo Er quickly lifts up Bai Yin Chen's hand that bleeding, panicking to have look, bend down her body and tearing little bit cloth of her lower skirt, faster she wrapping Bai Yin Chen's hand that wounded.

When Bai Yin Chen still being wrapped, once again he said: “When my younger brother saw her leaving with such hurtful, he also not able to see it, and then he secretly stole the key, help me to escape. But, it was still late for a step, at the time I arrived, when saw her she had already became cold corpse. I would not be able to see her smiling face anymore, I would be able to feel her warmness anymore, and I also could not see her angry face..... Nothing left, she was ignoring me, she would not be able to wake up anymore.”

Long Mo Er's hand stopped, slightly trembling, lifting her head up to see Bai Yin Chen's warm eyes. After all their love was such passionate, because of love they able to take a step to death! This can shake others heart, no matter how

beautiful the scenery, no matter how delicious a food, everything just nothing compare to their love story, everything is not counting.

What is love? Why love drives men crazy! Perhaps their love story is something called as it!

Their love has already gone beyond everything, it has gone beyond the world and even gone beyond the space.....

Such strong, such touching!



Chapter 121

Long Mo Er contradiction

Long Mo Er does not remember how could she has already been inside the rest place (in modern world we called it as hotel LOLS), she also didn't remember for how long she being shaken by that love story, but at the time when she gained herself, moon has already hung up in the sky, the silver light has already brighten the big ponds.

The hand supported on the window, looking at the moonlight which brighten

the night, such peaceful and quiet, very similar with every night that had passed, there is no slightest changes or differences, every day and night are forever coming back over and over, sun sets and sun arises, moon sets and moon arises!

But, the mood and feeling in heart can be such different.

Long time ago she used to think every matter could be settled ordinarily quietly and peacefully and naturally changing, everything just works so naturally, she never know that place that not far from her could give her such tearing hurt and painful to her heart. Perhaps, at this moment at somewhere the place that she looking at could be able happened same shocking and touching heart love story.

Why people who are loving each other cannot protect their love and stay together?

It happened to love before, it happened to have it before, but why cannot stay together? How could something such miserable happen? Actually who's fault is it? What's all of this? Actually whose fault and whose right it is?

Head is filled with so many questions without any answer, feeling is filled with being pity, but what use is it?

Sister Lin Ling isn't here anymore, everything could not to get back as before, after all their ending love story can make oneself feels helpless, what should she do in order to help Brother Bai?

Heart, such desperate!

Lifts up the head, close the eyes, it can feel the gentle wind is blowing, just

hoping that the wind being able to take away her worries and uneasy for this moment, blowing away her not peaceful feeling, restore back her peaceful moods.

But, heart isn't something easy to be peaceful if want to be peaceful.

Close the eyes, after all she is being able to see clearly of Ye Che's silhouette.

The deep frown and also wrinkle, pensively sleeping, from his face he looks so white pale and exhausted.

"Impossible, impossible!" Long Mo Er disbelief, she opens her eyes, and also shaking her head, her eyes little bit in hazed. "How can your look turn to be like this? No, it must because I am dreaming half the time so that I could think your look like that! You mustn't look alike that, you must be very happy right now, impossible for you to look like that."

Why she keeps on minding? Why she must take to her heart?

Fall in love, can it really this hurt?

Why cannot to spend sweet days once falling in love?

Is she too naive? Is she too naive to the point that she not knowing how to face her feeling?

Big Brother Chen and Sister Lin Ling such loving each other, such persistent about their love, but didn't stay together at last, while she has this much time, should she work harder to grasp her own happiness?

But, can she make her wishful thinking come true and get her own happiness?

Big Brother Bai and Sister Lin Ling are loving each others, while she does not get any affirm from Ye Che, aren't Ye Che and Fei Yan really the perfect match for each other?

So sad, frustrated!

What must she do for the sake of goodness? What should she do so that both of them can be happily?

Really sad, really so sad!

Being disappearing for few days, did he realize it? Would he remember about her? Still, does he happily staying together with Fei Yan? She is not daring to keep thinking and she also does not want to think of it!

Actually what should she do?

Climbing up to her bed, laying down and resting her body on the bed, Long Mo Er is covering her face with quilt, crying out loud to her heart's content.

Crying with great grief, constantly for very long time.



Chapter 122

Third Young Master's mood

“Where are you going? Actually where are you going?”

Faintly there is an emotionless sound which coming out from the restaurant private room, people who don't know might think a stranger who self-speaking, but the people who knows the sound that comes out from Ya Jian (elegant room), everyone knows the sound that comes out is having complicating moods. Although didn't not know what the detail happen, but the people who familiar with him could feel his changing, earthshaking changing.

“Why couldn’t I find you? Why you left me? What do you want me to do for you?” he murmured, while his hand is holding tight the liquor’s cup, his eyesight is sharp which able to fear people.

The owner is nervous because he thought the liquor’s cup could be smashed by him at anytime, he raised that liquor’s cup in order to drunk himself.

Outside the Ya Jian for such long distant there are people surrounded table.

At this time, in the middle way if the shut close Ya Jian they are carefully to make an observation about the movement from inside, with low voices they are discussing.

“The Third Young Master of Ye’s is really infatuated, in order to search for Third Young Madam he has been searching for the entire capital city.”

“And also don’t know what the reason of Third Young Madam left? Couldn’t it be the person who Third Young Madam likes not Third Young Master, so that she left?”

“Don’t know ah! This kind of Third Young Madam, never seen before!”

“Since Third Young Master got married, he is really such rare to show up in public, isn’t he? Even it’s rare to spot Third Young Master visiting Bai Hua Lane few times, outside other than Fei Yan, Third Young Master never seen with any woman, this Fei Yan is being cold because of Third Young Madam arrival, really wanted to see what kind of person Third Young Madam is!”

“Third Young Madam is coming from Long’s household, Long’s household is scholar family. As said this Third Young Madam has good knowledge, poetry and painting all she knows well! It is so reasonable if Third Young Master topple over.”

“That’s true, I did also hear it so! I am really curious with this Third Young Madam, what matter could it be happened to Third Young Madam by staying at Ye’s mansion? Why she left? Or perhaps there was an issue happened?”

“This, is unknown.....”

.....

At downstairs there are group of people, when the owner sees clearly who the

person is, immediately welcoming with smiling face, bringing them to enter Ya Jian.

“Third Young Master.” Lu Qun is little bit afraid when called.

Now the expression of Third Young Master is little bit scary, even though this for the sake goodness of her own Little Miss, but stills she is little bit feared. Third Young Master has been sometimes like this, but, she stills not get used with it.

Walking forward shrinking. Shrink to Gu Na Yan’s beside.

“You guys coming! How’s thing? Is there any news? Didn’t you guys say that already have clue?” Ye Che is cover Lu Qun’s voice, after looked at them, his eyes are changed clear and bright, hurrying asked.

“Third Young Master.....” Lu Qun uneasy makes step backwards.

Standing behind of her is Gu Na Yan who extending his hand to catch her arm, support her so that she can stand straight. “This hairpin, do you recognise it?” touching his waist’s pocket, Gu Na Yan is taking out a black glossy hairpin, show it in front of Ye Che.

While Ye Ding who is standing at beside, when Gu Na Yan is speaking, he has already sat down facing Ye Che.

123 – 125

Chapter 123 – 125

Traces (Series)

Ye Che at the moment when Gu Na Yan stretching out his hand, he has so sure that person as Wan Er, he has seen her worn that hairpin for many times, that day when she was leaving Ye's Mansion, she also worn that hairpin, it was gift that given by mother.

Ye Che is raised his body and grabbed that hairpin, at same time he is trying to ensure one more time by himself, he also said: "Doesn't this belong to Wan Er? Wasn't this thing given by mother to her, how could it with you?"

"Has there any clue regardless her? Have you seen her? Have you found her?" There's a crystal clear light at Ye Che's eyes, he thought immediately he would able to meet his Wan Er.

"Brother, you sit first, let Na Yan slowly tell you!" Ye Ding who was standing beside finally today he could see his older brother astute, little bit lamenting, please come back his lovely Third Sister in Law!

Stop to torment few of them! Their home is already in chaos, moreover the Long family also turns up and down, all are because his lovely Third Sister in Law! Speak honestly, all caused by his Third Sister in Law, this is his first time to worry someone badly!

Gu Na Yan cast a glance at Ye Che with nothing big deal happen eyesight, and then he pulled Lu Qun, and let her to have seat too. azurro4cielo.wordpress.com At the moment when her butt touched the stool, Lu Qun really wanted to jump and stand up. azurro4cielo.wordpress.com As if could feel what Lu Qun going to

to do, Gu Na Yan's hand that for all this time is free put little bit strength not to let Lu Qun succeed.

Since at the beginning Ye Ding has found out Gu Na Yan motive, he has observance the gestures between both of them, silent and not say anything, pretending as if see nothing, waiting to see the wonderful 'show' from two of them. azurro4cielo.wordpress.com While Ye Che still focusing and thought of his Wan Er in his mind, so that he also not pay attention the changes between Gu Na Yan and also Lu Qun.

Seeing Gu Na Yan's gesture, Lu Qun glanced at him for while, and shocked to catch the burning hot flame in his eyes, that kind of eyesight as if going fast to burn her, and let her face without reason burning hot, as if she is having a fever, her heart skip beat faster and faster, her palm cold sweating. azurro4cielo.wordpress.com Avoiding his forceful eyesight, so that Lu Qun only can cast away her restless heart while sitting quietly.

"Che, this is the boss of our Gu's family branch shop in An Yuan Xian (District An Yuan). azurro4cielo.wordpress.com Fu Zhang, this is the Third Young Master of Ye's family." Gu Na Yan is pointing to introduce the middle age man who is standing beside.

"Fu Zhang come to meet Third Young Master."

"What do you mean?" Ye Che did not understand with Gu Na Yan's words, as if asking something clearer.

Did this hairpin have relation with this man who standing in front of him? Did he know about Wan Er?

"This hairpin is found at Gu's family pawnshop in An Yuan Xian (District An Yuan) which being pawned before. azurro4cielo.wordpress.com There was Gu's men who were doing business at outside, this month came back from there, and passing by An Yuan Xian (District An Yuan), hence went to shop earlier in order to pick up goods. azurro4cielo.wordpress.com Never thought seen this, and at the same time brought it back, just by coincidentally seen by me, so that I brought to here, at same time I called Fu Zhang to come here too. azurro4cielo.wordpress.com Really does not know if before I didn't see this hairpin, does not now about this hairpin, perhaps all of us still have to take many

paths in order to know where about Sister Wan Er.” Gu Na Yan explained this few words regarding to the begin of his finding.

“Fu Zhang, how could this hairpin being pawned at your shop? Was the person who pawned has lively bright and big eyes, when smiled so sweet, fresh clean and pleasant little girl? She has this height, her hair is this long, was she the person? Was she?” After Ye Che listened to Gu Na Yan, he turned his gazing to Fu Zhang, stood up, hurried asking him, even when he asking him he is not forget to describe her appearance.

“That’s right, that right! How could this hairpin in pawnshop? Why Miss pawned this hairpin in your pawnshop?” After Lu Qun listened to Gu Na Yan explanation, she is also followed Ye Che excitedly forcing to ask where about Long Mo Er.

“Alright, you listen thoroughly then ask, you quiet and take seat first.” Gu Na Yan helplessly shook his head, in front of eyes this witty little girl every times she knowing there’s something related to sister Wan Er would turned be this excited, there’s no any differences with Ye Che. How could make the focus toward Sister Wan Er separate half to him?

Traces (part 2)

“That’s right, the girl who pawned it was someone exactly alike what Third Young Master described.” Fu Zhang really did not know whoever person she was, why she became attention to many people. His Young Master, all the Ye’s family Young Masters were all out looked for her, this girl absolutely wasn’t someone ordinary!

“When was it happened?” Ye Che has calmed down when asking, trying his best to compose himself even this moment his heart such rummage.

Finally, finally, there’s news about his Wan Er where about, immediately he would be going to meet with his Wan Er, his Wan Er immediately would come back to his side, too good.

“This girl who pawned the hairpin, this has been few days matter....”

“What? Few days ago?” Ye Che shocked cut off Fu Zhang’s words, there’s slightly worries in his eyesight.

The long span from few days ago to today it has been quite some time already, don’t know what changes going to happen to Wan Er from this few days ago, even when got the news two or three days ago, things could be changed which make one’s could not keep asking, so his Wan Er, could he still able to find her smoothly?

Immediately Ye Che made a denial about this probability, the persistence in his heart is getting stronger.

No, no matter how, although he must search her to the ends of the earth he stills must to chase back his Wan Er, won’t let her run away at this way.

“So Fu Zhang, why she pawned the hairpin?” Ye Ding opened his mouth asked.

This was a gift that given by Mother with her heart for Third Sister in Law, how could Third Sister in Law pawn it? Did she face difficulties that she could not solve it so that she needed money? Or was it, Third Sister in Law has determined not to have any relationship with Third Brother, so that she pawned the hairpin which given by Mother? That hairpin he ever seen by his own eyes worn by Third Sister in Law on her hair, during that time Third Sister in Law was so touching, all of these impossible was fake!

“Actually first time when this lady came to the pawn shop not really understood her reason, I could see that the lady was lacking so much money, hence, I made my measurement, realized the hairpin at her hair was extremely expensive, I had encouraged the lady to pawn the hairpin.” Fu Zhang was speaking more softly, but after he saw everyone showing questionable expression, he really couldn’t not give truth answer.

“Lacking of money? Encouraged?” after Ye Che heard these words he seemed to be sensitive, could not help his eyes keeps on staring at Fu Zhang.

That eyesight which staring at Fu Zhang really gave chills to spine, until now he stills not sure about this lady status, so he such afraid to say something wrong, afraid he going to get trouble, afraid that Gu’s family won’t use him anymore. Who would know who that lady was! Fu Zhang could feel that cold sweat on his forehead.

“I had used so much money gave it to that lady.” Fu Zhang hopes that his words would makeup. “Just two days earlier, that lady came back to pawn shop.”

“You said that she was coming back? You said she was showing up earlier two days ago? Was she alright? Did she look okay?” initially Ye Che who has already felt a sense of loss in his heart suddenly, his heart back to be lively by pulling Fu Zhang, pair of his hand grabbed onto his clothes, straightly looked at him.

“Yes, yes.” did not know why Third Young Master could be such emotionally excited, Fu Zhang becomes more tensed due to his action, but in his heart at least he could feel clearly on something, that lady is someone important for Third Young Master of Ye’s family, that lady is beautiful with delicate features, not looked alike lady who come from ordinary family, did, that lady is the Third Young Madam from Ye’s family?

After Fu Zhang made his guessing, his eyes glared open wide.

Traces (Part 3)

“Che, since there has already had a news, you are no need to be such emotionally stirred up, listen to Fu Zhang slowly speaking!” Gu Na Yan little bit worried but also wanted to laugh when seeing Ye Che.

So love can make someone changed to be such impulsive and also blind, the old Third Young Master was someone who perfectly composed and cold which no ordinary people could compare with, he used to joke himself whether his heart has no feeling toward anything of the outside world, now seeing this kind of circumstances, perhaps because Sister Wan Er has taken away his heart.

Glancing at the witty little girl at his beside, Gu Na Yan understand so that love can be so tempting!

Listened to Gu Na Yan, Ye Che’s face who has been taut for these few days finally soften little bit, he also loosen his hand that grabbed Fu Zhang’s clothes. “You continue say.”

“That lady two days ago came to shop, I thought she wanted to redeem that hairpin.” seeing their puzzling faces, Fu Zhang fasten his explanation pace. “Because at the beginning when the lady pawned the hairpin, that lady kept on begging me not to sell it to other, she said that she would come back to redeem it.”



Chapter 126

On Street, Meeting Fei Yan

Ye Ding showed his satisfy expression, He just knows that Third Sister in Law would not so easily to give away her feeling toward everyone of Ye's family, that hairpin is represented everyone sincerity toward her!

"That lady was really in needed money when she prawned this hairpin."

"How could you know she in needed?"

"The expression which shown by that lady had told everything, she really didn't have any way except prawned the hairpin, she was in needed to use money. Until two days ago when the lady showing up, she said that she wanted to leave for a period of time, she begged me to give her a time, she would come back to redeem the hairpin, whatsoever to say I must agree. Seeing that lady redden

eyes, I was soften, I told her there was ten days time span to let her redeem back the hairpin, so that no matter what she must back within ten days in order to redeem it back. Just never thought that Gu's men were passing by An Yuan Xian, redeem this thing."

"She lacking so much money? What was happened to her? Why she needed so much money?" how could he let his wife to drop any tears? Where was he when she needed his helped under that kind of circumstances how could he not beside hers? "Did she say where was she going to? Have you seen where she was heading?"

After Ye Che heard that Wan Er didn't bear to pawn that hairpin and also her eyes redden and tear flowing down, his heart ache almost break into pieces. She suffered no less bitterness, actually what matter was encountering after she left?

"This, the lady didn't mention anything, but I believe she still neared in Capital city, because she kept on saying that she would come back to redeem the hairpin."

"Alright, Let me say something." Gu Na Yan more or less understood after listened. "As Fu Zhang said that ten days ago Sister Wan Er went to pawnshop, few days later she also went to pawnshop, that means in between of these days Sister Wan Er was at An Yuan Xian city. Che, Lu Qun and I ever went to An Yuan Xuan city the place which closest to Wan Nian Temple During the days when Sister Wan Er was missing, during that time, we were separating to look for, there were possible for us to miss out that place, so that we were brushing past with Sister Wan Er. Che, what do you think?"

"En, must be like this." Ye Che felt everything that said by Gu Na Yan completely logical. "How could I overlook the place?"

"Now Wan Er had left, we must add more people to look for her in capital city and also An Yuan Xuan city, Ding, this let you to settle, you and Big Brother keep on looking at here. She must be near at me, this time I could not miss her out anymore, I won't let this happen. I will go with Na Yan for once again to An Yuan Xuan city, going there to find at each and every corners, I must absolutely want to know what was happened to Wan Er during that time." Ye Che's eyes flashed

sharp eyesight.

“En, alright.”

After walking out from restaurant, they were separating left, started to make moves.

Just at the time when going out from the city gate, Lu Qun slower her footsteps, her eyes kept on staring at other place. At the moment when Gu Na Yan realized she was in dazzled-stated followed her vision line to look at there, just knew what was looked by Lu Qun, at sudden Gu Na Yan’s face changed to expressionless, stopped his footstep, standing-still at there.

Gu Na Yan extremely unhappy, such unhappy waiting until when Ye Che would gain himself, when he would realize, waiting Ye Che to solve the matter.

After few steps, Ye Che from his own thought gaining himself, felt that two persons who were beside him suddenly missing, looking back. Seeing that two persons were still standing at his back, at the moment when he wanted to ask, he spotted a person from the opposite street coming over him, and also he understood why there were unhappy expression hung at Lu Qun and Gu Na Yan’s face.

Right the moment he was still doubting what to do, on contrary the person who stood opposite him spoke first.

“Third Young Master, long time no see.” such familiar and also gentle voice flown to his ears.

She came, would everything as before? Ye Che didn’t know.

“Probably regarding the matter about looking for Sister Wan Er, Miss Fei Yan also knew it? Thorough now in heart, you probably also can make your guessing, does not now Miss Fei Yan coming over here is there anything able to enlighten by your guidance?” as long as Gu Na Yan thought Wan Er was missing because after she showed up, though he could not vent his anger, but still hard not to speak with hard tone.

“I...” after heard that words, at the moment Fei Yan’s face changed to be dim.

She only spotted at them, and also simply wanted to greet them, after all,

knowing each other, after all, the person in front of her eyes isn't someone she said she going to let go and then she could let him go, after all....

She has thought for half day and decided to come over, never thought to encounter such breezeless, Gu Na Yan and Lu Qun eyes are completely affirmed her crime already, completely not giving her any chance.

How about Third Young Master? She could not think of it.

Fei Yan using sort of cold way with slightest smile, started to speak. "Young Master Xi Yan's words, of course Fei Yan understood, Fei Yan not that kind of person who is ill-informed and narrow-minded, how big Capital city is Fei Yan understood. Wanted to come over then just come over, there's not much reason for it!"

"You...."

Gu Na Yan still wanted to argue, but being stopped by Ye Che. "You and Lu Qun go ahead to outside the city lead the horse, I will immediately arrive."

Believe that Ye Che must be able to solve it, Gu Na Yan gulped his anger, pulling Lu Qun with big stride heading to outside the city. Lu Qun while running small steps she also turned her head to look at Ye Che and Fei Yan who are standing in the middle of the street.

"Enough, no need to look it anymore. Che will able to solve it, you just rest assured! Fei Yan does not have any not a bit position on Che's heart." Despite Gu Na Yan was angry, but he still such thoughtful to examine Lu Qun's expression.

"Ah?"

Lu Qun slow-response half-looking at Gu Na Yan, still small running looked. And when she felt Gu Na Yan still holding her hand, after walking at the street, Lu Qun's face blushed red wanted to free from Gu Na Yan's touching. How could he act this way? This is at street, being seen by many people, what suppose she do? She is a maid who just hasn't married yet! How could she being holding by a man?

But no mater how she tries to free, the warmth of Gu Na Yan's hand as if contagious over her own hand no matter how she tired could not free.

“Faster walking la! Don’t be dillydally, we still need to pay close attention to the time in order to look for Sister Wan Er.” of course because knowing Lu Qun shyness and also her movement, but, how could Gu Na Yan let her off and escape this easily.

After mentioning about Long Mo Er, Lu Qun giving up to free herself, anyway the most important is to find her Miss.

Actually, being holding also not really bad, on contrary her heart thump thump keep on crazily thumping, so happy and so warm.



Chapter 127

Only Can Be One Self

After his eyes looking that two person gone, Ye Che focus his sight to Fei Yan, wait for following.

“Does Third Young Master know that, at this moment what kind of eyesight that exposed by yourself?” Fei Yan used such cold smile asked, but this moment little bit stronger. “The eyesight that shown by Third Young Master and also Young Master Gu same as let one’s heart broken.”

Ye Che silent.

“Actually, Fei Yan never thought to meet Third Young Master on the street. Didn’t Fei Yan ever say before? Fei Yan really hope won’t be met Third Young Master, today is only by chance or only a coincidence! But, Third Young Master’s eyesight which shown no trust, really make Fei Yan can feel myself appearance as laughing stock.” The smiling face on Fei Yan suddenly change to be hopeless.

“Fei Yan, I...”

“Third Young Master does not need to say anything, actually Fei Yan always know that Third Young Master’s heart wanted to find Third Young Madam, so that can be this sensitive toward Fei Yan, Third Young Master feeling Fei Yan can slowly to think of it and also understand it. Third Young Master deeply in love with Third Young Madam, so that can be like this. Fei Yan really envy toward Third Young Madam.” Fei Yan really so sincere to say her feeling, pressing the sadness in her heart.

“Fei Yan, you listen to me. I believe your words, there’s no doubt, I know Fei Yan is good lady, I understand your character, so that I won’t doubt you. Perhaps because Wan Er went missing, then I changed to cannot put my trust to anyone, I want to apologize my attitude toward you, and thank you because you are understanding my mood, it is hard to find friend, having you who understand my mood I have had enough satisfied.” Ye Che saw her paused, and then continue the words that he wanted to say.

“Perhaps in the very beginning, at the time under the circumstances in which I thought I was senseless, but everything was changed after Wan Er showing up, as if there’s an additional color, everyday seems to be brand new and interesting, everyday is filled with many newness, simple and yet happy, everything feels such quirky, this is perhaps what so-called true love!” Ye Che letting out his tighten feeling, faintly said it out, his face showed such warm and also slightest smile. “Now, everyday is waiting for Wan Er’s news, everyday is going out to look for the figure who I can miss for, everyday waiting for miracle to happen, everyday is waiting her to appear.... now I am completely cannot without her.”

For the first time heard Ye Che such straightforward, such deep of truth. Fei Yan only could show surprise, shocked, envy, heart pain, and still slightest console. Thing that comfort her is Third Young Master didn’t think her as outsider, after all he has said all the things that he impossible to say toward her before.

Weaken heart, being comfort still in pain.

If she were Wan Er, she would pay everything at any cost in order to cherish the person in front of her who is thin and pallid man which able to give heart ache, if she were Wan Er, she is willing to give up her life only to love this man, if she were Wan Er, she would not disappear without news, would not let him to be this sadness.....

But, no matter what she weren’t Wan Er, she is only Third Young Master confidant in his heart.

She, is a girl from brothel house, being regarded as infamous confidant of Third Young Master, doesn’t she suppose to be satisfied? Born at prostitute’s place, how many girls could like her?

Didn’t she want to give her bless to them, did her?

“Third Young Master, Fei Yan in this life time the happiest thing is meeting Third Young Master. Third Young Master is outstanding and elegant, different with other, being able to be Third Young Master’s confidant, even though Fei Yan die won’t be regret. Fei Yan in here really wish Third Young Master can find Third Young Madam quickly, hoping Third Young Master and Third Young

Madam will live together until white hair. If there is any necessary, Fei Yan can come to do a formal visit, say everything clearly toward Third Young Madam. And also let everyone know that Fei Yan didn't say anything during at Wan Nian Temple, and also let everyone to break all the misunderstandings."

Fei Yan really sincerely said.

"Fei Yan, really thank you. Now I am heading to An Yuan Xuan to find Wan Er, so that, we are separated at here! Hoping you will also find your happiness, I left." After Ye Che said, he turned and left, heading to the gate outside the city.

Seeing Ye Che's figure getting further, Fei Yan is standing tall and upright for such a long time.

This time, the last time!

Perhaps, both of them won't be meeting anymore.

Tears, falling down.



Translated by: Azurro

Edited / Proofreading by : Obsidian

Chapter One Two Eight

Meeting Once Again

When Ye Che showed up, a man and woman appeared there just at the right moment in an alley on the other side of the street. The woman continuously looked at Ye Che, her eyes filled with shock, yearning, grief, endurance, cower....

And then looking at the two persons at his back, the woman was even more dumbfounded. She didn't move and just stayed there, still.

The person beside her felt something odd. He turned his head and stared at her.

“What's matter? Mo Er?”

Bai Yin Chen asked since he didn't understand. But after he waited for such a long time, Long Mo Er still didn't give him a response. Like a little girl who lost her soul, stuck there, her eyes were empty while her face was pale as if she didn't hear his voice.

She initially was walking properly but suddenly at that moment turned soulless. Bai Yin Chen didn't understand and followed Long Mo Er's line of sight. Hence the normal Bai Yin Chen, spotted someone's figure. He started to change to also be lifeless and quietly stood beside Long Mo Er. Together they stood still there and stared in same direction.

Him, she again saw him!

That person whom she could not let go! Him. Afterall (this) how could he suddenly show up in front of her eyes.

She thought she could forget him, force herself to blur his image (in her mind) and forget everything about him. But now after seeing him, she realized that she just could not do it.

Once again she met him, being in such close range to able to see him!

At this moment she started to feel that she actually longs for him so.

Such strong ideas immediately showed up and filled her head, filled her heart.

She wanted to walk forward to touch his handsome face, hurriedly get into his embrace, wanted to lean on him, wanted to go closer to clearly see him, wanted to tell him all her difficulties, wanted to cry aloud toward him....

His eyebrows make one line, his charming eyes, his deep pair of eyes, his beautiful tall nose, his handsome smile..... actually she never forgot, she still remembered so clearly. He in that distant place was still so charming as he used to be. (This) let her helplessly shift her sight.

And still he is someone who is completely the same person.

But why is there an expression of worry on his face?

Seeing him, Lu Qun, and Na Yan Ge Ge, Long Mo Er almost thought that the trace of wrinkle on his forehead was due to her leaving, thought his tired face was because of her departure.

That moment she wanted to go forward and gave him a hug, step forward to tell them she's back, then she saw their footsteps stopped. She spotted that stunning woman, Fei Yan. Long Mo Er's footsteps also halted.

Ye Che's head and back were turned so that she couldn't see his facial expression.

Fei Yan has an elegant demeanor, bright and beautiful. Fei Yan with a smiling face looked at Ye Che. Not everyone has that kind of smile which is full of feeling. As long as she saw Fei Yan, Long Mo Er could feel it.

So that once again she could not step forward, no matter what she still could not move ahead one step.

Her body as if dead there stopped, and once again not moving.

She could only helplessly look at the scene in front of her eyes. Heart ache.

That scene was not something that she could control.

She saw Lu Qun being pulled by Na Yan Ge Ge leaving Fei Yan and Ye Che alone. Have they forgotten her? They could rest assured so as to let Ye Che and Fei Yan stay together alone? Even they both were unconcerned about her (Long Mo Er)? Even Lu Qun no longer sided with her anymore? Did they also think that

Fei Yan, that woman, is someone (well) suited with Ye Che?

Fei Yan is so brilliant, Ye Che so handsome and extraordinary. Both of them stood together there as if they were beautiful immortals in an ancient picture scroll. No matter what she is unable to enter into Ye Che's world, can't she? Forever she can only be a stranger; her status forever will only be a substitute.



This project translating might seem so slow but, I have faith I will have finished the novel before this end of year. I don't lose any interest doing this translation on contrary, I want to give better reading experience for readers.

Translated by: Azurro

Edited / Proofreading by: Obsidian

Chapter 129

Suffocating

She only can stay there blankly staring at them, seeing the beautiful scene with both of them standing together. Being alone with her bleeding heart which felt as if it is being cut into pieces with a sharp knife. It won't heal again. Breathing is also difficult as if she will die soon.

Tears flowing down! Making her face wet!

Is she going to die?

She is hazily looking at Ye Che who is turning back. Hazily seeing the slightest smiles there on their faces, (then) seeing them separate, seeing Fei Yan send Ye Che off out of the city. Once again there's no chance for her heart to live.

Why? Why?

Why once again when she came back to the city, once again when entering the most familiar place, she felt even as if she was going to die? Tears wanting to fall to wash the away pain, the tears wanting to fall but was not allowed to.

What is happening to her?

It is not easy to determine. It was not easy to follow Big Brother Bai to return to this city but it was as if she no longer belongs here. Is it because she vanished so that all the previous feelings accordingly also disappeared? Ye Che disappeared. Na Yan Ge Ge disappeared. Even Lu Qun who grew up together with her, Lu Qun who she loves the most, also disappeared? Did all of them forget about her? Was it this easy for them to forgot her?

Can time really change everything? Did time really make everyone forget her?

Really as if drawn out by that kind of pain in her heart, she is going to die soon.

Who will come to save her?

Waiting until after there's no longer figure of any person, the shocked facial expression of Bai Yin Chen hidden inside the silver mask slowly changing back to normal. Just now he was momentarily shocked which was concealed by the silver mask. Luckily he is wearing his mask. Unconsciously his hand is supporting that silver mask, the silver mask shone in the surrounding light, flashing, blinding eyes.

But Long Mo Er did not feel (anything), her heart, her painful eyes would not keep his other things anymore.

"Mo Er, what is happening to you?" Bai Yin Chen, shocked, pausing for a moment sorted out his emotions and then asked with a really not normal voice.

Long Mo Er simply was not giving any reaction.

After a very long time, Bai Yin Chen drew back his sight from the opposite street. Long Mo Er's face was wet with tears while Bai Yin Chen was panicking. "Mo Er, what happened to you? Why are you crying? What's matter? Are you sick? Don't cry. What happened?" Seeing the trace of tears, Bai Yin Chen panicked pair of hands moved toward Long Mo Er's body. He was panicking and didn't know what to say, didn't know what to do.

Even though he previously saw her with reddened eyes and with a sad face, he never personally saw her cry. He did not lack feelings about her face being wet with tears. What happened to her? She always was happily smiling and never cried before! In the time he's known her, she always gave a strong smile.

The gesture of Bai Yin Chen's pain let Long Mo Er successfully change her focus for a little bit. Empty eyes slowly moving.

“Mo Er, what happened?” Bai Yin Chen tried to speak using a gentle voice.

Long Mo Er was still dumbfounded.

Bai Yin Chen didn't understand. What actually happened to Mo Er just now when he was absent-minded that she now is so sad? What is she feeling? He also just now followed Long Mo Er's line of sight. Does Mo Er also know them?

Finding this his heart is shaken. Bai Yin Chen sees Long Mo Er's tears have dried.

Is Long Mo Er's relationship with them not ordinary? What then is Long Mo Er's status (in relationship to them)? How is it that he hasn't heard anything? What is causing Long Mo Er's soulless eyes?